

# THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT MATTHEW

## LESSON ONE

The New Testament, or you might even say the last will and testament of Jesus Christ, is actually a continuation of the Old Testament. Jesus can be clearly seen from Genesis all the way through Revelation. In fact, both Old and New are revealing the plan of salvation for mankind through Jesus.

God gave the law to Moses and to His chosen people (The Hebrews). They were not able to keep the law, and God gave them a more perfect plan. The plan of salvation, not by works but by grace.

After Malachi, there were 400 silent years. There was a falling away from God during this period, and the Apocrypha written during this period was not accepted as inspired writings.

Throughout the Old Testament, there were promises of blessings from God, but there was a big "if". "If" they lived up to the laws. From Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, all the people of the earth would be blessed. Truly a promise of Messiah, because these promises were made to the faithful of whom Abraham was the father. We read in Galatians 3:6 "Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness." Galatians 3:7 "Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham." Galatians 3:8 "And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, [saying], In thee shall all nations be blessed."

You see, faith has always been the one thing that gets God's attention. Christianity came not unawares, but was actually the plan of God all along for mankind.

God's plan for mankind's salvation could not, and even cannot today, be worked out by the efforts of man.

The words "New Testament" are associated with the covenant God made with mankind through His Son, Jesus Christ the Lord. It is the last will and testament of Jesus Christ to the believers. He sealed this covenant with His shed blood.

At the end of the fourth century, years after the death of Jesus Christ, the books of the New Testament were first compiled.

The New Testament is not actually one book, but a library of 27 books collected and arranged in order. The writers had some direct contact with Jesus Christ. In the case of Paul who wrote most of the New Testament, the encounter was brief but very permanent. Some believe there were eight writers and some believe nine, but it really doesn't matter, since God is the author.

The New Testament begins with the four gospels. "Four" means universal and tells us this message is for the entire world. "Gospel" means good news. So you see by this, that the good news of Jesus Christ is for all the world.

Over 30 times in the Old Testament, there were prophecies of Jesus Christ that would be fulfilled in the New Testament. You see, the Old and New Testament are intertwined.

You might say that the New Testament is the last will and testament of Jesus Christ our Lord, making great and wonderful provisions for His followers. Just as when any will is read, the inheritors must prove their heirship. We have to lay hold to our claim. Just as any will is not activated until the testator dies, so is it with Jesus Christ our Lord. We could not lay claim to His gift of salvation, until He died on the cross. As in any inheritance, we do not pay for it. The beneficiaries just receive the blessings by claiming inheritance through sonship.

Just as we would thoroughly read the will so that we would not miss any of our inheritance in the world, so must we thoroughly read and understand the inheritance Jesus has provided for us in the New Testament.

This was God's plan from the beginning, when He promised a Savior in Genesis 3:15 "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel."

The four gospels were written by four men who were well acquainted with Jesus. Matthew, the tax collector (also known as Levi), was one of the disciples of Christ. He was very knowledgeable of the Old Testament. There are about 60 references to the prophecies in the Old Testament in Matthew. Tax collectors were hated people, and Jesus was criticized for choosing him. Matthew, in his writings, tried to emphasize that Jesus fulfilled the promises of the coming of the Messiah. Matthew shows the Kingship of Jesus, or if you will, the Lion of the tribe of Judah. The genealogy that is shown is just for another proof to the world of His right of Kingship. Jeremiah prophesied in chapter 23 verse 5 of his book about this and I quote, "Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth."

St. Mark, the second of the four gospels, was written by John Mark, who was believed to be the son of Mary of Jerusalem. He was related to Barnabas, probably, his nephew. Mark was a companion of Peter. Many of the early writers believe that Peter wrote the book. It is generally accepted that much of this book's information was furnished by Peter. Mark shows Jesus as a servant to mankind. Nineteen miracles are mentioned in Mark. Eight having to do with disease, five show His power in nature, four show Jesus' authority over demons, and two show His power and authority over death.

In Revelation the fourth chapter the seventh verse, we read about the beasts, which are symbolic, that are before the throne. Verse 7 "And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle."

Matthew shows the Lion, Mark shows servitude or the calf, Luke shows the man, and John shows the eagle, symbolic of God.

The gospel of Luke was written by Luke the physician. Luke was a personal friend of Paul, probably, his doctor.

In the book of Luke, as we said, Jesus was presented as the Son of man. This book emphasizes the grace of God toward man through Jesus Christ (if you will, this is the face of a man book). Luke emphasizes prayer in his book. Women appear prominently in Luke's narrative. Probably, half of the material in Luke is not found in any of the other gospels. Luke relates the birth, life, and ascension of Jesus. His book relates to mankind.

The gospel of St. John shows Jesus as God. The book of John begins, "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God". The eagle is symbolic of God. This gospel completes the four faces mentioned in Revelation.

The writer of the book was John himself. The purpose of the book is to instill faith in the believer of the deity of Jesus Christ, to show Him as God manifest in the flesh.

My own opinion of John is that he was closer to the Lord Jesus Christ than any of the other men who walked with Him. His love for Jesus was very evident in the fact that he was the only disciple present at the crucifixion. Jesus showed His special love for John, when He asked John to take His mother as his own. John was known as John the beloved.

In St. John, Jesus reveals Himself more clearly as what He really is than in any other book of the Bible. It is a deeply spiritual book. We will spend a great deal of time in St. John in this study.

The book of St. John shows the Fatherhood of God. Fatherhood is mentioned 100 times. John recorded 8 miracles of God to prove the divinity of Jesus The Christ.

St. John builds faith and points to eternal life in Jesus Christ. You may have already recognized that this is my favorite book in all the Bible. In the 14th chapter of John, we are told of the power to heal, that we have when we ask in Jesus' name. I won't get into that now. I am just explaining that St. John is a very powerful book.

The Acts of the Apostles are just what the name says. It is the history of the early church.

Then most of the rest of the New Testament was written by Paul. Beginning with Romans, we see letters to groups of people to instruct them in right living. Then in Revelation (written by John), we see the prophecy of the end times and the second coming of Christ.

## Matthew 1 Questions

1. What could the New Testament be called?
2. Is Jesus confined to just the New Testament? Explain.
3. What are both the Old and New Testament revealing?
4. Who did God give the law to?
5. Describe the plan of salvation.
6. After Malachi, how many silent years were there?
7. The promises of mankind were descended from what three people?
8. Who was the father of the faithful?
9. What has always been the thing that gets God's attention?
10. What are the words "New Testament" associated with? Name 2.
11. When was the New Testament compiled?
12. Why does it really not matter whether there were eight or nine writers of the New Testament?
13. What does "Gospel" mean?
14. How many times in the Old Testament were there prophecies of Jesus?
15. What is spoken of as the last will and testament of Jesus?
16. What must an inheritor prove?
17. Why should we thoroughly read the Bible?
18. What other name was Matthew known by?
19. What did Matthew emphasize in his book?
20. What animal is symbolic of Kingship?
21. What proof does the genealogy show?
22. In Mark's writings, what did he show Jesus as?
23. How many miracles are mentioned in Mark?
24. List the faces mentioned in Revelation and tell which of the four gospels each reveal.
25. What is Jesus presented as in the book of Luke?
26. The gospel of St. John shows Jesus as what?
27. The eagle is symbolic of what?
28. What is the purpose of the book of St. John?
29. Who was the only disciple present at the crucifixion?
30. Who wrote most of the letters in the New Testament?
31. Which book shows the Fatherhood of God?
32. What is the Acts of the Apostles all about?
33. What is Revelation all about?

We placed our foundation for the New Testament in the last lesson.

We need to look at some of the prophecies in the Old Testament. This, too, is foundational before we begin our chapter one in Matthew.

The first promise of the Savior was in Genesis 3:15 "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel."

You see, God promised a Savior for the weakness of mankind. He understood that man would not be able to live within himself without sin. There would have to be a plan of salvation.

In Galatians 4:4, we see that the Scripture in Genesis was fulfilled-Galatians 4:4 "But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,"

Luke 1:34 "Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?" Luke 1:35 "And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God."

You see, God is the Father, Mary is the Mother. My own personal belief is that the Spirit of Jesus came from God and the flesh from Mary.

In John 1:14 "And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth."

Matthew 1:23 "Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us."

You see from the Scriptures above, that God the Word, Jesus, took on the form of flesh (from Mary) and lived with us here. His name Emmanuel is certainty that He was actually God housed in the flesh of a man.

Many times, throughout the Bible, we find that the Spirit of Jesus was one with the Father, but His flesh (from Mary) got tired, suffered, had to rest, and was even tempted in all points that we are.

His prayer, immediately before the crucifixion, was "My Spirit is willing, but my flesh is weak." This tells us there was a difference in His flesh and Spirit.

In John 4:24 we read: "God [is] a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship [him] in spirit and in truth." God the Father, God the Word, and God the Holy Spirit are all Spirit.

Even we must be Spirit to have eternal life. John 3:6 "That

which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit."

John 3:5 "Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and [of] the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God."

You see, if we are fleshly, then we are bound for an eternity in hell. Only those who are living the life of the Spirit inherit eternal life in heaven with Jesus.

In Genesis 18:18, we see Jesus as the promised seed of Abraham. I quote: Genesis 18:18 "Seeing that Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him?"

In Acts 3:25 we see the fulfillment. I quote, Acts 3:25 "Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed."

In Matthew chapter one verse one, we see that Jesus was the descendent and the promised one to bless the whole world through: Matthew 1:1 "The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham."

Genesis 17:19 "And God said, Sarah thy wife shall bear thee a son indeed; and thou shalt call his name Isaac: and I will establish my covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, [and] with his seed after him."

You see, Isaac was the son of promise (spirit); Ishmael was the son of the flesh.

This is fulfilled in Galatians 3:29 "And if ye [be] Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

In Matthew chapter one, we see the lineage of Jesus (the promised seed) traced to Abraham. Matthew chapter one verse two: "Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren." -----

You see, God is not slack in the promises He makes, but carefully fulfills every one and in detail.

In Genesis chapter 49 verse 10, we see the prophecy that the Messiah will descend from the tribe of Judah: Genesis 49:10 "The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him [shall] the gathering of the people [be]."

In Luke 3:33, we can easily see the genealogy of Jesus goes right back to Judah: Luke 3:33 "Which was [the son] of Aminadab, which was [the son] of Aram, which was [the son] of Esrom, which was [the son] of Phares, which was [the son] of Juda,"

My only question in all of this is, how could the learned men of the Bible possibly overlook all of these instances of the fulfillment of Scripture?. It seems so obvious to us that Jesus fulfilled every prophecy. I guess the Scripture in Isaiah 9:7, probably, caused them to believe that He would be a king, or ruler of some kind, while He was here on earth. They really could not believe this babe in a manger could be Him. Isaiah 9:7 "Of the increase of [his] government and peace [there shall be] no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this."

We see in Matthew 1:1 that Jesus is the heir to the throne of David, "The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham."

It is so strange that David was the ancestor of Jesus in the flesh, but Jesus was David's God in the Spirit. In Luke chapter 20 verses 41-42, we read Luke 20:41 "And he said unto them, How say they that Christ is David's son?" Luke 20:42 "And David himself saith in the book of Psalms, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand," You see, David called Jesus, Lord. Jesus' Godhead is difficult for so many to understand, because He left heaven and lowered Himself to the body of mankind. The body of Jesus was a natural body as you and I have, and in the sense of the body, He was a descendent of David; but His Spirit is Everlasting God.

In Micah 5:2, we read of the prophecy of the place that Jesus the Christ should be born. Even Herod knew that this prophecy had been made, because he called his authorities on this subject in and asked them where it had been prophesied that He would be born.

Micah 5:2 "But thou, Beth-lehem Ephratah, [though] thou be little among the thousands of Judah, [yet] out of thee shall he come forth unto me [that is] to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth [have been] from of old, from everlasting."

In Matthew chapter 2 verse 1, we read of the fulfillment of this prophecy of the birth place: Matthew 2:1 "Now when Jesus was born in Beth-lehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,"

Jerusalem and Bethlehem are very close. I suppose they are no more than 5 miles apart. "Bethlehem" means house of bread. Jesus called Himself the Bread of Life. What an interesting combination. You see, the God we serve is a perfect God, every little detail fits together. Every Word that proceeds from the mouth of God is truth.

In Isaiah chapter 7 verse 14, we read that the Saviour will be born of a virgin which is an impossibility in the eyes of mankind, but with God all things are possible. Isaiah 7:14 "Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." The word "Immanuel", as we said before, means God with us.

Matthew 1:18 "Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise:

When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost."

Today there are so many denominations that are removing the virgin birth from their doctrine, but you see, this is one of the most important things believed in the Bible. If Jesus was not God, then He could not be the perfect sacrifice for our sins. And if He was not the perfect sacrifice for our sins, then we are still guilty and are bound for hell.

You see, you must believe that God was the Father of Jesus, and that Jesus was, in fact, God in the flesh for your sins to be forgiven. A mere man, or woman, could not be a perfect sacrifice. Jesus was the Lamb of God. John called Jesus just that. A lamb without blemish, a male, first born, never been with a female lamb. Jesus, you see, never married, had no broken bones, and was free from sin. All these things Jesus fulfilled.

In fact, the three gifts brought to Him as gifts at His birth, recognized Him as God in the flesh (gold), the perfect lamb sacrifice (frankincense), and the groom of the bride of Christ (myrrh). Gold means God spiritually, frankincense accompanied the meat offering for sacrifice, and myrrh was a sweet perfume for the wedding bed. You see, God is perfect. It is our understanding of His Scriptures that is imperfect.



## Matthew 2 Questions

1. The first promise of a Savior was found where in the Bible?
2. God promised a Savior for the -----of mankind?
3. Where in the New Testament was the Scripture fulfilled that the Savior would be born of the seed of a woman?
4. In John 1:14, what do we learn?
5. Was it Jesus' Spirit, or flesh, that got tired?
6. In St. John 4: 24, we read "God is a Spirit ", so how must we worship Him?
7. What must we do to receive eternal life?
8. If we are fleshly, where are we headed?
9. Who will inherit eternal life in heaven with Jesus?
10. In Genesis 18:18, who will be blessed through Abraham?
11. In Galatians 3:29, who were the promises for?
12. Isaac was the son of what?
13. Ishmael was the son of what?
14. David was the ancestor of Jesus in what?
15. In the Spirit, what was Jesus to David?
16. Why is it difficult for many to believe in the Godhead of Jesus?
17. Where was Jesus to be born?
18. What does "Bethlehem" mean?
19. What was Jesus called?
20. What is an impossibility, in the sight of man, pertaining to Jesus' birth?
21. What does "Immanuel" mean?
22. If Jesus is not God, what does that mean to the Christians?
23. What must we believe about Jesus to have our sins forgiven?
24. What did John call Jesus?
25. What did the gold that was brought to Jesus proclaim Him as?
26. What did the frankincense proclaim Him as?
27. What did the myrrh proclaim Him as?
28. If God is perfect, why do we not understand the Bible?

For the last two lessons, we have been laying foundation for the New Testament study. We will continue this week, as well, with the Old Testament prophecies that were fulfilled in the New Testament through the birth, life, crucifixion, and resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ.

In Jeremiah 31:15, we read about the massacre of the infants. "Thus saith the LORD; A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, and bitter weeping; Rahel weeping for her children refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not."

You see, Jeremiah was speaking prophetically of the time when Herod would try to destroy the Christ child by killing all the children born anywhere near the time that Jesus was born. Herod had asked the wise men to come back and tell him where to find the new born, but they went back home another way to avoid telling where to find Jesus.

Matthew 2:16 "Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Beth-lehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men."

God knows the plans of people, even before they carry them out. He even knew, in the time of Hosea hundreds of years earlier, that Herod would try to destroy the Christ Child.

Hosea 11:1 "When Israel [was] a child, then I loved him, and called my son out of Egypt."

All through the Bible, Egypt had been a place of refuge. Not only did Jesus run to Egypt for safe harbor, but so did Joseph in the Old Testament. If you remember, just a few years ago when the whole world turned its back on the Shah of Iran, Egypt took him in. You see, Egypt, with all its faults, has still been a place of refuge. God will not overlook this. He will bless them for it. In Matthew 2:14, we see the fulfillment of Hosea 11:1, Matthew 2:14 "When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:"

If we will really look at this Scripture above, we will more fully understand why the wise men brought the gold as a gift to the baby Jesus. We will also understand that it was not just one or two coins, but enough to sustain Jesus, Mary, and Joseph until it would be safe to return to their homeland.

In Isaiah 9:1-2, it is prophesied that Jesus would minister in Galilee. In Matthew 4:12-16, it is fulfilled (not only fulfilled, but distinctly mentioned). I will just mention one sentence in this, Matthew 4:14 "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,"

You see, every little detail is important to God. In Deuteronomy 18:15, it was predicted that Jesus (as a prophet) would be raised up to help His people. Jesus was many things, including a prophet. Deuteronomy 18:15 "The LORD thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken;"

Jesus was Prophet, Teacher, Healer, Deliverer, but most of all He was, is, and always will be God the Word. A prophet (worth his salt) tells the truth, and Jesus said that He was the Son of God. We see this prophecy in Deuteronomy fulfilled in John 6:14 "Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world."

Jesus filled so many shoes, but, I believe, one of the most important things is His priesthood. He is our High Priest. He intercedes for us continually. I John 2:1 "My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous::

In Psalms 110:4, we read the prophecy of Jesus a Priest, Psalms 110:4 "The LORD hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou [art] a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek." You see, Melchizedec was the one Abraham paid his tithes to. He had no father or mother. A shadowy figure of the coming Christ. In Hebrews 6:20, Melchizedec was mentioned again in a comparative light of Jesus as High Priest. Hebrews 6:20 "Whither the forerunner is for us entered, [even] Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec." There is much mystery surrounding Melchizedec, but if it were important for us to know more about him, then there would be more written in the Bible about him. The important thing to note in all of this, is that Jesus the Christ is our High Priest forever. There is no need for another.

In Isaiah 53:3, it is prophesied that Jesus will be rejected of men: "He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him: he was despised, and we esteemed him not."

No other person has ever been so rejected. His own disciples, who walked with Him daily, ran when they crucified Him (except John). The Jews, or His fellows, did not accept Him as Messiah. In St. John 1:11, we read of this rejection fulfilled. John 1:11 "He came unto his own, and his own received him not."

Jesus had character above all of His fellows. In Isaiah 11:2, we read of the prophecy: Isaiah 11:2 "And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD;"

Solomon was known for his wisdom, but we read in Luke 11:31 "The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon [is] here."

Jesus is the source of all wisdom, knowledge, understanding, and counsel. We must pray for the mind of Christ to be able to minister in these areas. In Luke 2:52, we read the fulfillment. Luke 2:52 "And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man."

This Scripture in Luke is just after His visit in the temple at Jerusalem when He was 12 years old. God allowed Him a natural family, so that He could be tempted and have feelings of growing up, so He could relate to us.

In Zechariah 9:9, it is prophesied about His triumphal entry into Jerusalem. In the song "Messiah" that my grandson, David, sings, it tells of Jesus' entry into Jerusalem on a colt of an ass. Zechariah 9:9 "Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he [is] just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass."

In John 12:13 "Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed [is] the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord." John 12:14 And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written, "His entry into Jerusalem will be one of power and great glory when He comes again. He will be Lord of lords and King of kings and will reign for 1000 years with great power and authority here, on the earth.

It was prophesied that Jesus would be betrayed by a friend. Jesus even called Judas "friend" when he came to betray Him. Judas kissed Jesus on the cheek when he betrayed Him. Judas had walked with Jesus and the other disciples. He had seen the miracles, but Satan entered him through his greed, and he was tempted more than he could stand up to.

We read the prophecy of this in Psalms 41:9 "Yea, mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up [his] heel against me."

Mark 14:10 "And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them."

Judas carried the purse and was caught up in greed. The thirty pieces of silver tells us much (3 times 10). That is God dealing with the world system. You know three means God, and 10 means world government. "Silver" means redemption. Can you see the spiritual message here? God redeemed us from the world system through His Son. In Zechariah 11:12 "And I said unto them, If ye think good, give [me] my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty [pieces] of silver." We see the fulfillment in Matthew 26:15, "And said unto them, what will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver." The remorse of Judas was evident when he went back to the authorities, tried to give the money back, threw it down, and went and hung himself.

Zechariah 11:13, it prophesies of Judas carrying the money back

and them buying a potter's field for burying the poor with the blood money. Zechariah 11:13 "And the LORD said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them. And I took the thirty [pieces] of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of the LORD." In Matthew 27:6-7, you can easily see this fulfillment. You may read these scriptures at home. They are so familiar I did not reproduce them here. I will just put a portion here so you may see the fulfillment, "And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in."

We see in Psalms 109:7,8 that Judas' office was to be filled by another, and then in Acts 1:18-20, we see the fulfillment. In the first chapter of Acts verse 26, we see that Matthias took Judas' place with the other 11 disciples.

The prophecy of false accusers coming against Jesus is in Psalms 27:12 "Deliver me not over unto the will of mine enemies: for false witnesses are risen up against me, and such as breathe out cruelty." You see, there could be no true accusation against Jesus, for even Pilate said, "I find no fault in him."

The fulfillment of this prophecy is found in Matthew 26:60-61, "But found none: Yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses, And said, This fellow said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days." You see, Jesus was innocent of all charges; the Bible says He was free from sin. In Chapter 53 of Isaiah Verse 7, it was prophesied that Jesus would not try to defend Himself, and in Matthew 26:62-63, the high priest tried to ask Him if He were Christ, the Son of God. Jesus did not answer.

You see, Jesus was, and is not, subject to the high priests of the world. HE IS THE HIGH PRIEST.

In Isaiah 50:6, it prophesies that Jesus would be smitten and spit upon. In Mark 14:65, we see the fulfillment "And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophecy: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands."

You see, every little detail was fulfilled. In every point, Jesus fulfilled the prophecy. Can you imagine how these people, who hit Jesus and spit upon Him, will feel when they stand before Him on judgement day?

Next, we will try to finish the prophecies and fulfillments before we go into Matthew chapter 1.

### Matthew 3 Questions

1. How were the prophecies of the Old Testament fulfilled?
2. How did Herod try to destroy the Christ Child?
3. Why did the wise men go home another way ?
4. What country has been a place of refuge throughout the Bible?
5. How much gold did the wise men bring Jesus?
6. Mention 5 things Jesus was when He walked here on the earth.
7. Jesus filled many shoes, but what is one very important job He filled?
8. We are supposed to sin not, but if we sin, we have an-----with the Father.
9. Jesus was to be a high priest after the order of -----.
10. Whom did Abraham tithe to?
11. What is the most important thing to remember about the priesthood?
12. Who denied Jesus 3 times just before the crucifixion?
13. Finish this verse "He came unto his own -----".
14. In chapter 11 verse 2 of Isaiah, we discover some of Jesus' character traits; name 6.
15. What was Solomon known for?
16. How was Jesus compared to Solomon?
17. We must pray for what to be able to minister in wisdom, knowledge, understanding, and counsel?
18. Why did Jesus have a natural body and a natural family?
19. In Jesus' entry into Jerusalem, when He was here on the earth, what was He riding?
20. When Jesus returns to the earth, how will He enter Jerusalem?
21. How many years shall Jesus reign here on the earth?
22. When Judas came to betray Jesus, what did Jesus call him?
23. What was the price he sold Jesus for?
24. What is the spiritual meaning of the price paid?
25. What 3 things show the remorse of Judas?
26. What became of the money?
27. Who replaced Judas with the eleven?
28. What was the statement of Pilate about Jesus' guilt?
29. What did Jesus say, when questioned by the high priest?
30. Who is the real High Priest?

We are still looking at the Old Testament prophecies and their fulfillment in the New Testament.

Psalms 69:4 "They that hate me without a cause are more than the hairs of mine head: they that would destroy me, [being] mine enemies wrongfully, are mighty: then I restored [that] which I took not away."

Jesus had no sin. As we said in the last lesson, there was no reason to crucify Him. His enemies were of the church. They crucified Him, not because He did not love them, but because they were jealous of His power, wisdom, strength, and love for the unlovely.

St. John Chapter 15 verses 23-25, we read the fulfillment. I quote, "He that hateth me hateth my Father also." John 15:24 "If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father." John 15:25 "But [this cometh to pass], that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause."

This is almost true today. If you see someone trying to do good, the rest of the world does not understand it. They think there must be a reason, somewhere, where you will gain. You see, the world does not understand sacrifices. Jesus was our example. He gave of Himself; even to those who would not hear. Can we do any less, and call ourselves followers of Him?

I think perhaps one of the most important prophecies is in Isaiah chapter 53 verses 4 and 5, Isaiah 53:4 "Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted." Isaiah 53:5 "But he [was] wounded for our transgressions, [he was] bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace [was] upon him; and with his stripes we are healed."

You see, Jesus not only bought our salvation for us, so that we might have an eternity in heaven with Him, but He, also, took our griefs here on this earth to help us in the here and now. He took the punishment for our sins. Because He was beaten, we are healed. We must pray, believing, that we receive healing; and we shall receive.

In Matthew 8:16-17, we see the Scripture in Isaiah fulfilled. Matthew 8:16 "When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with [his] word, and healed all that were sick:" Matthew 8:17 "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare [our] sicknesses."

So many people do not believe in healing in our day. They believe that healing went out with the disciples. That is just not so. God is the same yesterday, today, and forever. He never changes. Our belief in Him is what has changed. Let us read in St. John

chapter 14 and see who healing is for. Verse 12 begins John 14:12 "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater [works] than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father." John 14:13 "And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son." John 14:14 "If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do [it]." These words are in red in the Bible. This is a direct quote from Jesus Christ. Let us look at the requirements. "He that believeth on me"; any believer in the Lord Jesus Christ can do the works of Jesus. We cannot heal in our own name. We must pray "In the name of Jesus", as we read in Verse 13, and again, in Verse 14.

Jesus healed in His own name. We have no power in and of ourselves. It is the name of Jesus that has the power. Actually, we are laying hands on the sick, and the power of Jesus is healing them. The power is Jesus. We just speak the words that activate His power. We must pray, believing that we receive, and we shall have it.

In Isaiah 53:12, we see the prophecy of Him being crucified with sinners. "Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors."

Matthew 27:38 "Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left."

You see, the sins that Jesus died for were real. They did not belong to Him. They were our sins. He was our substitute and took the punishment that we deserved.

The most cruel of all deaths is crucifixion. They nailed Him to the cross. In Psalms 22:16, it is prophesied, "For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have enclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet."

I sing a song called "Ten Thousand Angels". In this song, it says He (Jesus) could have called ten thousand angels to remove Him from the cross and set Him free, but He did not. He chose to die for you and me. He really did not even need the angels. He could have come off the cross at any time. You see, the wages of sin is death. Someone had to pay. Jesus paid it for us.

In St. John 20:27, we read the fulfillment, "Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust [it] into my side: and be not faithless, but believing."

In Psalms 22:6-8, we see the prophecy of Him being mocked and insulted. In Matthew 27:39-40 this, too, is fulfilled. You may read this one at home.

God is so exact. He leaves out not even the smallest detail. In Psalms 69:21, we read, "They gave me also gall for my meat; and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink."



In St. John 19:29, we read, "Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put [it] upon hyssop, and put [it] to his mouth." The very smallest detail of prophecy is not over looked.

In Psalms 22:8 and Matthew 27:43, the mocking of Jesus is almost identical. Psalms 22:8, "He trusted on the LORD that he would deliver him: let him deliver him, seeing he delighted in him." Matthew 27:43, "He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God."

In Psalms 109:4, we see Jesus prays for His enemies. "For my love they are my adversaries: but I give myself unto prayer." Then in fulfillment Luke 23:34, "Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do." Even today Jesus is saying, (on our behalf) "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do." Can you imagine the hurt He feels, listening to music elevating Satan? Can you imagine the hurt He feels when He hears people questioning His miracles? Can you imagine the truly terrible hurt He feels when those called by His name deny that He was God manifest in the flesh? Can you imagine the hurt He feels when He hears people deny the validity of the Bible (for He is The Word of God)? Why must we nail Him to the cross all over again? Why can we not believe that He was, in fact, who He said He was? The Everlasting One, The Beginning and the End, sitting even now at the right hand of the Father, even now saying, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do."

In Zechariah 12:10, we read about the prophecy about Jesus' side being pierced, then in St. John 19:34, we read the fulfillment. "But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water." Life is in the blood. Jesus gave His life, so that we might have life more abundantly.

When Nelson and I were on tour to the Holy Land a few years ago, we saw the area where they believe they cast lots for Jesus' robe. In Psalms 22:18 we read, "They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture." The fulfillment of this prophecy is in Mark 15:24, "And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take" The robe that Jesus wore had no seams, and that is why they gambled to see who would get it.

The perfect Lamb sacrifice could not have any broken bones, or imperfections. It had to be totally without blemish. We read the prophecy in Psalms 34:20, "He keepeth all his bones: not one of them is broken." The custom, when someone was crucified to make death quicker, was to break their legs. We read in St. John 19:33, that this was not done with Jesus. St. John 19:33, "But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs:"

You see, Jesus was perfect in every way. In Isaiah 53:9, it was prophesied that He would be buried with the rich, and in Matthew 27:57-60, it was fulfilled. Joseph of Arimathaea laid Him in his own tomb which had never been used.

In Psalms 16:10, we read of His resurrection, "For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell: neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see

corruption." You see, Jesus arose on the third day. Decay of the body begins on the fourth day. In Matthew 28:9, we read that He had risen from the grave. Matthew 28:9, "And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshiped him." He prophesied that He would rise from the grave, and He did.

His ascension into heaven was prophesied in Psalms 68:18, "Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell among them." In Luke 24:50-51, "And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven."

You see, Jesus had fulfilled all of His work here on this earth at that time. When He comes back in the same way (in the clouds) that He went up, He will be Lord of lords and King of kings. He will come in great power and glory. In Acts 1:9-11 is a prophecy about the return of Jesus Christ to this earth, when He sets up His 1000 year reign. I quote, "And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight." V-10, "And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel;" V-11, "Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven." God fulfills His prophecies. Jesus will return. He will reign 1,000 years on the earth.

Next, we will begin in Matthew. Read the first chapter 3 times.

## Matthew 4 Questions

1. What reason did they have to crucify Jesus?
2. Who were Jesus' enemies?
3. Jesus loved them, but they were jealous of Him. Name 4 things they were jealous of.
4. Jesus said, if you hate Him, you hate whom also?
5. If Jesus had not done -----among them , they would not had had sin.
6. What message in Isaiah 53:4-5 has to do with our health?
7. What must we do to be healed? Two things.
8. How did Jesus cast out evil spirits?
9. What do most Christians believe today?
10. In chapter 14 of St. John, who can do the works that Jesus did?
11. What name has the power to heal?
12. When Jesus took on the sins of the cross, who did the sins belong to?
13. What is the most cruel of all deaths?
14. Was Jesus forced to die for you and me?
15. Which one of the disciples would not believe, until he touched the holes in Jesus?
16. What substance did they offer Jesus to drink?
17. What was Jesus' prayer for those who crucified Him?
18. When people deny the Bible, why does it hurt Jesus?
19. Life is in the -----.
20. Why did they gamble for Jesus' robe?
21. Why did they not break Jesus' legs?
22. Who was the rich man who furnished Jesus' tomb?
23. What day did Jesus rise?
24. What day does the body begin to decay after death?
25. When Jesus blessed them, what physical action did He make?
26. In Acts 1:9-11, what was prophesied?
27. How did Jesus go to heaven?
28. Who was there, besides the disciples?
29. What good news did they bring?
30. When Jesus appears, where will we see Him?

The Gospel of St. Matthew was written by Matthew. The key word in Matthew is "fulfilled", as we have been looking at the prophecies being fulfilled. Matthew was, also, called Levi. Matthew was one of the twelve apostles. Most people agree he was a Roman tax collector. Matthew was hated by the publicans, and they criticized Jesus for eating with him. When Jesus called him, he left the tax tables and followed Jesus.

In the first chapter of Matthew, we see the complete genealogy of Jesus Christ. In Matthew, we see Jesus as the promised Messiah. If you will, The Lion of the tribe of Judah. (Matthew-one of the four beasts, 1st of 4 gospels, in Revelation).

If we were to think of a theme for this book, we would say its purpose would be to show Jesus as a fulfillment of that promised Messiah (His Kingship). "Gospel" means good news, and certainly this book of Matthew is a book of good news.

Matthew 1:1 "The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham."

I believe, here, that this generation of Jesus Christ begins with Abraham, because he is the father of all believers as we read in Galatians 3:29 "And if ye [be] Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise." Remember, all believers in the Lord Jesus Christ make up spiritual Israel, the (spiritual) descendants of Abraham, because of their faith. We read in the 17th chapter of Genesis that these spiritual descendants of Abraham would be so many, they will be impossible to number. Genesis 17:5 "Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee." Physical Israel is just one nation. This is speaking of spiritual Israel (all believers in Christ). Verse 7 of the same chapter of Genesis, it makes it clear that these are spiritual descendants. Genesis 17:7 "And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee." This covenant was based on Abraham's faith and on the faith of his spiritual descendants. Abram (high father) was changed to Abraham (father of a multitude).

Matthew 1:2 "Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren;"

This genealogy starts with the three Old Testament patriarchs, whom the blessings were passed down through. "Isaac" means laughter. Jacob's name was changed to Israel. "Jacob" meant trickster, and God changed his name to "Israel", which means having power with God. This Israel was the father of the twelve tribes of Israel. This Judas was the same as "Judah" (God be praised). Jesus is shown as being the Lion of the tribe of Judah. This first gospel (Matthew) shows Jesus as a Lion (the first of the 4 faces of the beast in Revelation).

Matthew 1:3 "And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and

Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat Aram;" Matthew 1:4 "And Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon;" Matthew 1:5 "And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse;"

We need to stop for a moment here, and recognize that Jesus was descended in the flesh from Booz (a Jewish man) and Ruth, a Moabite (a Gentile). This actually makes Jesus both Jew and Gentile.

Matthew 1:6 "And Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon of her [that had been the wife] of Urias;"

"David" (the beloved of God) was in the ancestry of Jesus. God promised David that his ancestor would come and rule. A very strange thing is that Jesus, through the flesh, was a descendent of David, but in the Spirit was David's God. David called Him Lord. We, also, see in the verse above, just how forgiving God really is. David had Uriah killed so he (David) could have Bathsheba, Uriah's wife. David's and Bathsheba's first child died, but God blessed them later with Solomon. God's people are not perfect, just forgiven.

Matthew 1:7 "And Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat Abia; and Abia begat Asa;" Matthew 1:8 "And Asa begat Josaphat; and Josaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Ozias;" Matthew 1:9 "And Ozias begat Joatham; and Joatham begat Achaz; and Achaz begat Ezekias;" Matthew 1:10 "And Ezekias begat Manasses; and Manasses begat Amon; and Amon begat Josias;" Matthew 1:11 "And Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon:"

Matthew 1:12 "And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel;" Matthew 1:13 "And Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor;" Matthew 1:14 "And Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud;" Matthew 1:15 "And Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob;"

I know that you have noticed the difference in the spelling of the names here and in the Old Testament. Most of this is caused because of the difference in the Greek and Hebrew languages.

Matthew 1:16 "And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ."

This, too, is a large statement. Jesus took on the form of flesh, so that He might be tempted in all ways as we are. "Jesus" means Saviour. "Christ" means the Anointed One.

Matthew 1:17 "So all the generations from Abraham to David [are] fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon [are] fourteen generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ [are] fourteen generations."

This was the beginning of Jesus the Christ, the specially Anointed One of God. All others, who came, were leading up to the Messiah.

Matthew 1:18 "Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise:

When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost."

In this verse, we see that Mary was promised to Joseph. Mary and Joseph had not slept together. Her pregnancy was of the Holy Ghost. The Holy Ghost's Spirit had hovered over Mary, and she had conceived.

Matthew 1:19 tells us so much about Joseph, Matthew 1:19 "Then Joseph her husband, being a just [man], and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily. Matthew 1:20 "But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost." Matthew 1:21 "And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins."

You see in these Scriptures that Jesus is the Son of God. He had no earthly father. Joseph was not Jesus' father. God was His Father. Mary furnished the flesh, and God furnished the Spirit.

Even in the name that was chosen for the Son of God to use on this earth, there is a message. "Jesus" means Saviour.

All of this explanation, here, of the birth of Jesus is startling to us, but can you imagine how startled, or surprised, Joseph was when an angel told him that Mary was carrying Messiah. His people had been looking for Messiah all of Joseph's life. Messiah was to actually live in his home.

Matthew 1:22 "Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying," Matthew 1:23 "Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us."

God took on the form of flesh and dwelt among us. Jesus was, is, and always will be, God the Word, who became the Son housed in a body for His stay on the earth. A virgin having a child is beyond the comprehension of worldly people even today, and many have decided that Jesus was not, in fact, born of a virgin.

How foolish it is not to believe that Jesus was, in fact, born of a virgin. A God, so great that He could speak a world into existence, can certainly cause a virgin to have a child. Abraham's wife, Sarah, thought it was impossible to have a child after she was 90 years old, but she did. You see, with man it is an impossibility, but with God all things are possible.

Matthew 1:24 "Then Joseph being raised from sleep did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:" Matthew 1:25 "And knew her not till she had brought forth her firstborn son: and he called his name JESUS."

In these verses, we see several things:

1. That God does truly speak to some people in dreams. Not all dreams are from God. When a dream is God speaking to you, there will be no doubt.
2. Joseph heeded God's message in marrying Mary.
3. Joseph's restraint from living with Mary until the Christ child was born. This took great discipline on his part .
4. His following instructions to the utmost in naming the baby JESUS as the angel had instructed him.

Next lesson read chapter 2 of Matthew six times in preparation for the lesson.

## Matthew 5 Questions

1. Who wrote the Gospel of Matthew?
2. What is the key word in Matthew?
3. What was another name for Matthew?
4. Who do most people believe he worked for collecting taxes?
5. What did he do when Jesus called him?
6. "Gospel" means what?
7. In Matthew, we see Jesus as what?
8. In Matthew, which beast do we see from Revelation 4:7?
9. What is the theme of Matthew?
10. To whom were the promises of blessings given?
11. What does Abraham mean?
12. For how long was the covenant with Abraham?
13. In Galatians 3:29, who are the spiritual descendents of Abraham?
14. Who were the three Old Testament patriarchs?
15. Ruth was a ----- woman?
16. What does David mean?
17. Even though Jesus was physically a descendent of David, what was He to David?
18. Why did Jesus take on the form of flesh?
19. What does "Jesus" mean?
20. What does "Christ" mean?
21. How many generations from Abraham to David?
22. How many generations from David to the carrying away into Babylon?
23. From carrying away into Babylon, how many generations to Christ?
24. In verses 18-25, what is the express purpose?
25. In verse 18, Mary, before she came together with Joseph, was found to be with child of whom?
26. What kind of man does verse 19 call Joseph?
27. What had Joseph planned to do with Mary before the angel appeared to him?
28. In verse 20, who appeared to Joseph?
29. How did he appear to Joseph?
30. Who did the angel call Joseph?
31. What instructions did the angel give Joseph on naming the child?
32. Why?
33. Who was Jesus' Father?
34. What did Mary furnish?
35. What does "Emmanuel" mean?
36. What causes worldly people to deny the virgin birth?
37. Why did Sarah believe she could not have a child?
38. Finish this statement. Some things are impossible with man, but with God -----.
39. Does God ever speak in dreams?
40. What was the second thing we saw in verses 24 and 25?
41. What was the third thing?
42. What was the fourth thing he heeded?



In the last lesson, we finished chapter 1 of Matthew.

We will begin today with Matthew 2:1 "Now when Jesus was born in Beth-lehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem," Matthew 2:2 "Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him."

"Bethlehem" (Ephratah) means house of bread, and it is appropriate for the Bread of Life (Jesus) to be born there.

This Herod the king, was an evil king, who was, also, known as Herod the Great. This time was established by the death of Herod about 4 B.C. These "wise men" (probably Gentiles) came to the capital (Jerusalem) expecting the King (born King of the Jews) to be at the capital.

Contrary to the belief of many, there was not a specific number of wise men. These wise men (called Magi by some) were, probably, men who were able to interpret dreams and understand prophecy, as well as being able to discern the heavens. They knew Messiah was prophesied. They knew that His star would appear in the east. They knew this star proclaimed the promised Messiah, and being wise, they came to worship Him.

Matthew 2:3 "When Herod the king had heard [these things], he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him."

Herod was troubled, because he believed this person (born King of the Jews) would dethrone him. When it speaks of "..all Jerusalem..", it means people who might lose their standing, if a new king were enthroned.

Matthew 2:4 "And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born."

These men that he gathered were the rabbis, the religious leaders of that day; the men who knew the law and knew of the promise of Messiah. In the Old Testament, it was prophesied that Christ would be born in Bethlehem Ephratah, Micah 5:2.

Matthew 2:5 "And they said unto him, In Beth-lehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet," Matthew 2:6 "And thou Beth-lehem, [in] the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel."

You see, these religious people knew where He was to be born. They just did not want to give up their literal way of looking at the law. They were expecting a mighty king, who would rule them and overthrow the Romans.

Matthew 2:7 "Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared." Matthew 2:8 "And he sent them to Beth-lehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found [him], bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also."

You see, Herod was a liar. He had no intention of worshipping Him. He wanted to kill Him. He was afraid of Him.

The wise men did go and find Him. Bethlehem is only 5 miles from Jerusalem. It is a short journey. Herod thought he had tricked the wise men.

Matthew 2:9 "When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was."

These wise men of old followed the star in the east (Jesus Christ). They were led to Him. We must be led by this same star in the east. (Jesus will appear again in the eastern sky.)

Matthew 2:10 "When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy." Matthew 2:11 "And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh."

I guess, because there were three types of gifts mentioned, people erroneously believe in three wise men.

As I have said many times before, the three gifts brought were spiritual meanings of who Jesus is, was, and always will be. The "gold" recognized Jesus as God. The "frankincense" recognized Jesus as the perfect Lamb sacrifice. The "myrrh" recognized Jesus as the groom of the bride of Christ. "Gold" spiritually means purity of God. "Frankincense" accompanied the lamb offering in the temple sacrifice, and "myrrh" was the sweet aloe for the wedding bed. Can't you see the spiritual meaning?

The "gold" was not just a piece of gold, but enough for Jesus, Mary, and Joseph to live on while they were in exile.

We might learn a lesson from the wise men. When they were in the presence of Jesus, they "fell down, and worshipped him". We come into God's house with such irreverence.

Matthew 2:12 "And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way."

These wise men heeded the warning of God. God does speak in dreams sometimes. We must be able to follow God's instructions, and not man's. They did not even go back to Jerusalem.

Matthew 2:13 "And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the

young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him."

"Angels" are ministering spirits, and God sent a message to Joseph by this "angel of the Lord". You see, God knows everything even before it happens. This is called foreknowledge, not predestination.

As we said before, "Egypt" has always been a refuge. Here, Joseph would hide Jesus, until the danger was over.

Matthew 2:14 "When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:"

Joseph heeded God's warning. They left in the darkness, so that no one would be aware of which direction they went. Most people did not travel by night, and Herod would not expect them to travel at night either.

Matthew 2:15 "And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son."

Every detail of prophecy was fulfilled, as we said in the earlier lessons. It is interesting to note, again, that Joseph, (the coat of many colors Joseph) who was a type and shadow of Jesus, was a refugee in Egypt, as well.

Matthew 2:16 "Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Beth-lehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men."

Herod had been tricked, and he was mad. He killed all the babies that would have been near the age of Jesus. I had always thought that it was just the boy babies, but this Scripture says all the children, indicating both boys and girls under two years of age.

Matthew 2:17 "Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying," Matthew 2:18 "In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping [for] her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not."

In an earlier lesson, we discussed this fulfillment of prophecy. This reminds us of the babies being killed in the days of Moses, as well.

Matthew 2:19 "But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt," Matthew 2:20 "Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young child's life."

We discussed before, that Joseph listened to messages from God that came in dreams.

Matthew 2:21 "And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel." Matthew 2:22 "But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judaea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:"

It seems, this son of Herod was a murderer and, probably, as bad or worse than his father. Joseph had obeyed God and came back into the land of Israel, but was afraid to go to Jerusalem. God gave Joseph a dream and told him to go to an area away from Jerusalem, "into the parts of Galilee".

Matthew 2:23 "And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene."

God takes care of all the prophecies. One thing to note is, that Jesus was a Nazarene, not a Nazarite.

It was said that nothing good could come out of Nazareth (St. John 1:46), but with Jesus all things are possible.

Next lesson read chapter three, five times.

## Matthew 6 Questions

1. Where was Jesus born?
2. What does "Bethlehem" mean?
3. What had these wise men seen?
4. What did Jesus call Himself?
5. What was the name of the wicked king?
6. What other name was the king known by?
7. Why did the wise men come to Jerusalem?
8. How many wise men were there?
9. What other name were the wise men known by?
10. What three attributes did they have?
11. Why was Herod worried about the King of the Jews?
12. When Herod called the chief priests and scribes together, what did he ask them?
13. Who were these people he called, really?
14. What were these religious people expecting Him to be?
15. What lie did Herod tell the wise men?
16. How far is Bethlehem from Jerusalem?
17. Who is the Star in the East?
18. Where will Jesus appear on His return to earth?
19. Name the three gifts the wise men brought?
20. Which gift meant that Jesus was God in the flesh?
21. Which gift recognized Jesus as the perfect Lamb sacrifice?
22. Which gift recognized Jesus as the Groom of the bride of Christ?
23. How much gold was given?
24. What lesson can we learn from the wise men?
25. Why did the wise men not return to Herod?
26. Does God ever speak in dreams?
27. How did Joseph know to flee into Egypt?
28. What are angels?
29. What country has always been a refuge?
30. Why did they leave at night?
31. What earlier Bible personality, also, was a refugee in Egypt?
32. When Herod found he had been tricked, what did he do?
33. When God told Joseph to come back to Israel, how did Joseph get the message?
34. Why did Joseph turn into Galilee?
35. Was the new ruler better, or worse, than Herod?
36. What was the name of the city they settled in?
37. What was Jesus to be called?

In this lesson, we will begin with Matthew 3:1 "In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea," Matthew 3:2 "And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand."

The name "John" means the Lord is gracious. What a wonderful name for someone who would proclaim the arrival of the King of Grace (Jesus the Christ). The rest of his name, the Baptist, just meant that he was the baptizer. Israelites had practiced a form of baptism for years. It was used as a symbol of being purified from sin by older customs. The washings in the Temple really were a form of baptism.

John, also, was teaching in a different way. He was not in the temple, but wherever there were people and water to baptize those people in. That was where he preached. He preached mostly in an area near Jericho and near the Jordan River. This "wilderness" did not mean an area heavily wooded, or like the jungles. It just meant it was out of the populated areas. It, also, meant that he was out where the ordinary people were.

His message was a simple one. Repent. Today that message is needed as the first step toward becoming a Christian. You see, unless we are truly sorry for our sins, we probably will not turn from them and begin a brand new life with Jesus. In a society that believes everything is relative and there are no absolutes, we seldom see true repentance.

John's next statement fits our day just as well as the day in which John was preaching. Truly the kingdom of heaven is at hand. There have been preachers ever since John bringing this same message. God never changes, and neither does His message.

Matthew 3:3 "For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight."

Isaiah prophesied that there would be one proclaiming the arrival of Christ.

John's message was simple here, as well. He was saying straighten your life up. Do not cause problems for the Lord. Be easy to be found.

Matthew 3:4 "And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey."

Verse 4 brings a message of the simple life John lived, not one dressed in finery. The appearance was simple, but he brought the most important message. John was not concerned about what he wore, or what he had to eat, just enough to sustain him.

When we were in Israel in 1979, we discovered that there is a nut grown in that region called a locust. Perhaps, John was eating honey and nuts, or maybe bugs and honey. It isn't important. We just understand from this, that he was not concerned about things of this world. His only purpose was to proclaim the coming of Jesus Christ.

Matthew 3:5 "Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan,"

Even though he was not dressed in finery, his message was an exciting one, and people from all the surrounding area came to hear this man speak.

Matthew 3:6 "And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins."

His message was a commanding message. They were sure his message was true. It seems that many confessed their sins and were baptized. This baptism that John was doing was very similar to the custom of the Jews. The similarity was in that it was connected with sins being forgiven. We will see later on, that this was a different type of baptism. After Jesus, baptism became a symbol of death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus. When you go under the water, it symbolizes being buried with Him; and when you come out of the water, it symbolizes rising from the grave with Him.

Matthew 3:7 "But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?"

The Pharisees and Sadducees were hung up in tradition. The Pharisees were what we would call the people of the middle class today. The Sadducees were from the upper class, and some from high-priest families. The law was everything to them. They really thought themselves better than just the average person. They were righteous in their own sight.

When John called them "generation of vipers", he really was revealing their hidden sins. They were Self-proclaimed experts. He knew their personality and knew that from these groups would come much opposition to Jesus.

Matthew 3:8 "Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:"

I think John was saying to them, you say you have repented; now show me.

Matthew 3:9 "And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to [our] father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham."

John was telling these people not to expect to be saved, just because they had Abraham as an ancestor in the flesh. As we will read in Paul's writings later on, that not the physical ancestors of Abraham will inherit salvation, but those of the spirit (believers in Christ). Those, who by faith, have been grafted into the family line

of Abraham by the shed blood of Jesus Christ. We are related to Abraham through our faith, just as he was accounted worthy by his faith. We, also, see a message to these self-righteous people---that God can take from the things they count as unimportant, and make of them a family for Abraham.

Matthew 3:10 "And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire."

In this, John was telling this people, you have had your chance. Preparation had been made. If you are not productive to the kingdom, you will be cut down. Just as we will see in a later lesson where Jesus cursed the fig tree, and it withered and died.

Matthew 3:11 "I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and [with] fire:"

Here, we see the symbol of water to the reality of the Spirit. John was telling these people, I am as low as a servant boy is to a king. He wanted them to know, without controversy, that he was not Messiah. He was a voice proclaiming Messiah's arrival. John was saying, truly my baptism (baptism of repentance) is important, you must repent; but there is a better baptism (baptism of the Spirit) that is the earnest of the Spirit (2 Cor. 1:22). He was saying, when you receive this baptism of the Holy Ghost, it will set you on fire for God.

Matthew 3:12 "Whose fan [is] in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire."

This Scripture was saying He (Jesus) will stir up the people. He will separate the good (wheat) from the evil. This floor, probably, spiritually meant the whole world. He shall gather all believers together unto Him, and they shall become united in Him (the Bride of Christ). "He will burn up the chaff" just meant the wicked shall burn eternally.

Matthew 3:13 "Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him."

In this Scripture above, it seems important to know that Jesus had been living in Galilee, of which the little town of Nazareth was a part. He sought John out specifically to baptize Him, probably to show His association with John. They were cousins in the flesh, and, also, John would recognize Him. John would be able to see with his own eyes the One he had been proclaiming.

Matthew 3:14 "But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?"

John felt so humble by this. He knew Jesus was Messiah. John felt his need for the salvation Jesus had to offer.

Matthew 3:15 "And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer [it to be



so] now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him."

Jesus, in speaking to John, affirmed His authority; and John submitted to the higher authority. Jesus was telling John that the correct thing for everyone to do is to do everything righteous. Don't give anyone the appearance of not fulfilling all righteousness.

Matthew 3:16 "And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:" Matthew 3:17 "And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

So much was told spiritually in these two verses, and yet, you cannot separate the two. We know by the description of the baptism, that He went under the water; or else, how could He come straightway out. The most important thing to me, in this Scripture above, is the agreement of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. The three were present at this important event, and not only present, but approving. The Father God spoke of His approval in the Son.

The Scriptures can tell us so much, if we will only take the time to look. The One in God is the Spirit. They are in agreement. There are three totally separate personalities in one accord.

Next lesson read chapter 4 five times.

## Matthew 7 Questions

1. What is the meaning of the name "John"?
2. What does "the Baptist" mean?
3. Was John's baptism strange to the Jews?
4. The "passing through the Red Sea" is a symbol of what?
5. Where did John preach?
6. What one word covered his message?
7. Why are preachers still saying "the kingdom of heaven is at hand"?
8. Who prophesied about the voice of one crying in the wilderness?
9. What kind of message did John's clothing and food bring?
10. What was John's only purpose?
11. Even though John was not dressed in finery, did the people come to hear him?
12. When they were baptized in the Jordan, what else did they do?
13. What did John call the Sadducees and the Pharisees?
14. Who were the Pharisees?
15. Who were the Sadducees?
16. What did John say that God could use to raise up descendants to Abraham?
17. How are we, Christians, like Abraham?
18. What will happen to the unproductive?
19. John's baptism was to what?
20. What two things will Jesus baptize with?
21. What did John want the people to know about himself?
22. Who are the wheat?
23. Why did John submit to Jesus?
24. Why was Jesus baptized?
25. What was indicated by the Voice, by Jesus, and by the Dove?
26. The one in God is what?

We will begin today in Matthew 4:1 "Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil."

You can understand from the above Scripture, that this happened soon after the Spirit descended on Jesus at His baptism.

Most Christians do not realize that the minute you really give your life to the Lord Jesus Christ, temptation comes from every direction. The Bible says Jesus was tempted in every way that we are. Job was tempted, as well.

You see, the devil believes that under heavy temptation we will not be able to withstand. He believes, that just like Adam and Eve fell to temptation in the garden, that with the right temptation we will fall, also. He believed he would be able to tempt Job, but worse than that, the devil felt if he could make the temptation great enough that even Jesus would succumb to the temptation.

Hebrews 4:15 "For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as [we are, yet] without sin."

Jesus came to conquer sin and the devil. He faced temptation (greater than we face) and yet, He did not fall to temptation. Temptation comes to all, and it is not sin until it is acted upon in a negative way for self-gain.

Before we go on, we need to take note that the Spirit of Jesus was Godly. It was His flesh that beckoned Him to sin. His soul was neutral. The soul of Jesus, like ours, is the will. Jesus did not listen to the flesh, as we will see in these next few verses.

Matthew 4:2 "And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred." Matthew 4:3 "And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread." Matthew 4:4 "But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God."

All temptation comes when we are at our weakest point, and when we are alone (usually). In the case of Jesus, here, the devil realized that Jesus had not eaten for forty days. He tempted Jesus at this point of need. What the devil was not aware of is that Jesus (or anyone else for that matter) is much stronger when they are fasting. God miraculously feeds the inner man. During a fast to God, I seldom get hungry. It is only when I fast to lose weight, that I nearly starve.

Take note of the 40 here (time of testing). With every test (if we depend on Jesus Christ our Lord), there is a way out. Notice in verse 3, the devil approached Jesus with a question, as he did Eve.

"If thou be the Son of God." He was trying to plant a doubt in

Jesus' mind that He was the Son of God.

Jesus set an example for us with this answer. He said, "It is written." Our answer, when the devil or our lusts tempt us, should be, "It is written".

We are instructed to eat the Word of God. Our source of help in every situation is to have the Word of God so engraved in our inner being, that we will be able to draw our strength from the Word.

We are instructed in chapter 6 of Ephesians to put on the whole armour of God that we might fight the devil.

Ephesians 6:10 "Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might." Ephesians 6:11 "Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil." Ephesians 6:12 "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high [places]." Ephesians 6:13 "Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand." Ephesians 6:14 "Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness;" Ephesians 6:15 "And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;" Ephesians 6:16 "Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked." Ephesians 6:17 "And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:" Ephesians 6:18 "Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;"

In each of these verses above, God is telling us that it is our responsibility to prepare for the battles we will face. It is, also, our responsibility to stand head to head with the devil in combat. We must stand and fight, if we are to win over the devil. Our weapons are not physical, they are spiritual. It is important to prepare and be ready. Our day of combat is here. The church is being shaken. All who have not prepared will fall to the devil.

There must be no compromise of the Word of God. We must make it even more important to consume the Word of God, than to eat physical food. We cannot win battles with the devil in our own power and might. We must fight the devil with the Word of God and in the name of Jesus the Christ.

One more time I want to emphasize, WE MUST GET OUR EYES OFF THE PHYSICAL FOOD AND ON THE SPIRITUAL (WORD OF GOD).

Matthew 4:5 "Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple," Matthew 4:6 "And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in [their] hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone."

This started off with "then". It simply meant the devil gave up on the first temptation, so he tried another tactic.

Probably, "the holy city" mentioned here was Jerusalem. Take note that the temptation was outside the temple. In fact, it was on the top of the temple.

In verse 6, the devil again asked whether Jesus is the Son of God. He even went so far as to quote a Scripture to get Jesus to tempt God the Father.

So many times today the enemy will come to us, using passages from the Scripture to make us believe that we are not of God. The devil never changes. It is the same devil, and the same tactics. In verse 7, we see the correct way to talk to the devil.

Matthew 4:7 "Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God."

Jesus could have thrown Himself headlong from the temple to show a sign or wonder of who He was. God calls people who have to have signs and wonders, before they will believe, a wicked and perverse generation. You see, God is not interested in convincing us through our mental capacity. He wants us to believe from our hearts.

Not every sign and wonder is from God. The devil is a counterfeiter. Matthew 24:24 is printed in red, because it is the words of Jesus, Himself. "For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect." You see, we must know the Word so well that we will be able to discern the truth from a lie.

Matthew 4:8 "Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them;" Matthew 4:9 "And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me." Matthew 4:10 "Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve."

We can see, from these Scriptures above, that Satan increased what he offered each time. He thought that if he offered Jesus the whole world as His kingdom, that Jesus would jump at this. Along with the greater offering came an even more blatant sin. Jesus had to fall down and worship Satan to receive the world and all that was in it (Satan's belief). What Satan did not realize was that Jesus would take the earth back for mankind. He did not take it back by compromising with the devil. He took it back through the victory of the cross.

Sometimes, it is difficult to recognize the enemy. Jesus had no trouble recognizing him, standing against him, and removing him. "Get thee hence Satan". We should take a lesson from this. Anything, or anyone, who compromises with the devil in sin, has sold out to sin. We must not fellowship with those who continually practice sin. As Jesus did not stay in this place with the tempter, neither should we. Anything that is not pleasing to God is sin.

In the statement made by Jesus, "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve"; we see we must not serve Satan or sin. We must walk in the footsteps of Jesus. Of course, we are not perfect; we will stumble and fall, but we must not be a servant to sin. The desire of our hearts must be to please God.

Matthew 4:11 tells it all. "Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him." The devil is subject to the command of Jesus, and he had to leave. He is, also, subject to us when we tell him to be gone in the name of Jesus. The Bible says, In James 4:7 "Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you". The angels (ministering spirits) came and saw to Jesus' needs. The angels, encamped around Christians, will help them, also.

Next lesson we will continue in chapter 4.

## Matthew 8 Questions

1. Why was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness?
2. The minute you give your life to Jesus, what comes?
3. Satan had tempted Adam, Eve, and Job. If he could make the temptation great enough, who else did he believe would fall to his temptation?
4. What 2 things did Jesus come to conquer?
5. When does temptation become sin?
6. How many days did Jesus fast?
7. What kind of doubt did the devil introduce?
8. What did he tell Jesus to turn to bread?
9. How did Jesus answer?
10. Man is not to live by bread alone, but by what?
11. What did the devil not realize about fasting?
12. What similarity was there between Jesus' and Eve's temptation ?
13. How should we reply to temptations of the devil?
14. Why are we to eat (consume) the Word of God?
15. What are we instructed to do, in Ephesians 6, to fight the devil?
16. Why do we need armour?
17. What 4 things do we wrestle against?
18. Loins girt with what?
19. Having on a breastplate of what?
20. What are our feet to be shod with?
21. What kind of shield?
22. What is the helmet?
23. What is the sword of the Spirit?
24. Who are we to pray for?
25. If we are to win over the devil, what 2 things must we learn to do?
26. If our weapons are not physical, what are they?
27. We have no power of our own. What 2 things must we use against the devil?
28. What did the devil add to his argument at the "holy city" to try to convince Jesus?
29. What city was, probably, the "holy city" mentioned?
30. People, who have to have a sign or wonder, before they will believe, are called what kind of generation?
31. Not every sign and wonder is from God. In Matthew 24:24, what are we warned to watch out for?
32. What was Jesus offered in the third temptation?
33. How did Jesus get the world back from Satan?
34. Anything that is not pleasing to God, is what?
35. Who alone must we worship and serve?

We will pick up today at Matthew 4:12 "Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee;"

We will see, here, that the end of John's work (proclaiming the coming of the Christ) would be the beginning of Jesus' ministry. Just as Jesus came not for those who already knew God, He began His ministry in a very spiritually dark place. Without Jesus Christ, there is no hope, nothing to look forward to. God's purpose in His beginning in the dark place was to show that His power and might were not drawn from Jewish law. This was a new day. Jew and Gentile alike would have to receive Him not through law, but through grace.

Matthew 4:13 "And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim:" Matthew 4:14 "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying," Matthew 4:15 "The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, [by] the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles;" Matthew 4:16 "The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up."

Later on, we will hear Jesus say that He came not for those who need not a physician, but for the lost. It is very interesting, to me, that God would have Jesus come from Nazareth where it would be spoken (that "no good thing could come out of Nazareth".)

The "sea", mentioned here, was the Sea of Galilee, a large rough sea where much fishing was going on. This sea had several towns scattered along the banks. Capernaum was where Peter's home was. Later on, because of so widespread unbelief here, this city would be totally destroyed. Today it is a tourist sight. Walls are thrown down and rubble is everywhere. Many of the activities of Jesus took place near this sea. The demonic man was freed of the legion of demons near here, the feeding of the multitude took place here, the draft of the fishes was here; I could go on and on, but you get the idea. Even all the fantastic miracles that Jesus did here, was not enough to convince these people of who He was. A prophet is not accepted in his or her own area. Many of the Gentiles believed, but their Jewish friends already had the law, and felt they were not in need of a Saviour.

Matthew 4:17 "From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand."

This is the same message John the Baptist was preaching.

Matthew 4:18 "And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers." Matthew 4:19 "And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men." Matthew 4:20 "And they straightway left [their] nets, and followed him."

This Sea of Galilee, as we said, was a popular place for the men in this area who made their living fishing. This sea is about six



miles wide and seventeen miles long. When the wind would get up, it would be really rough; so rough that you could easily lose a ship and all aboard.

These 3 verses tell us a lot about our Lord Jesus Christ while He walked on the earth. He spoke and these two men obeyed. These men, by vocation, were fishermen. When the call came for the ministry, they did not hesitate. We could take a real lesson from these men. So many times, when the call comes to the ministry, we hesitate and try to finish the job at hand before we answer. These men dropped everything and followed Jesus. This call, that Jesus made to these two men, was not for salvation, but to work with Him. They had to give up the comforts of home, and even the living they had, for an uncertain future of winning souls. This call brought them out of the worldly into the spiritual. These men were strong. It takes a lot of muscle to pull in fish nets full of fish. The name "Andrew" means manly, and "Peter" means rock. You can see by their names, that these men were powerful physically. Jesus was about to make strong spiritual men of them. They would face more hardships as ministers of the Word than they ever did as fishermen. These men were just ordinary men. They had no degrees in ministry, only the call of God upon their lives. These two were to become part of the elite 12 that would, through Jesus, make a giant impact upon the world. We will look at them, again and again, as we go through this study. For now, it is enough to know that they would no longer fish for food, but for the souls of men.

Matthew 4:21 "And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James [the son] of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them."  
Matthew 4:22 "And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him."

You see, again, James and John did not hesitate when Jesus called. They left their father, their means of support, their home, and all worldly possessions, and followed Jesus. These two were, also, known as "sons of thunder". John, as we would see in later lessons, was very close to Jesus. He was known as John the beloved. The mother of James and John would ask Jesus to let her two sons sit on the right and left of Jesus in His kingdom. He did not grant her wish. He said it was not His to give.

Matthew 4:23 "And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people."

Jesus was about the Father's business. He taught, preached, and healed in their churches and wherever people had needs. There were a number of little towns in Galilee. Many miracles were done in these cities. Jesus stated that if the miracles that were done in Capernaum had been done in Sodom, they would have repented and been saved. In Capernaum, they believed that Jesus was the carpenter's son, not the Son of God.

Matthew 4:24 "And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases

and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them."

The Bible says that if all the miracles that Jesus did were written in a book, there would not be enough books in the entire world to hold them. You can easily see how this fame would spread. Literally thousands were healed, freed from demon spirits, restored to sanity, and stopped shaking from the palsy. All these people had to do was to believe, and just one touch from Jesus' hand restored them. You can easily see that His powers were not limited. As we will see in verse 25, people from all areas, that were in traveling distance, brought their sick to Jesus and then carried the message back of His great powers. He not only healed the body, but the spirit, as well.

Matthew 4:25 "And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and [from] Decapolis, and [from] Jerusalem, and [from] Judaea, and [from] beyond Jordan."

We know of several occasions of over 5,000 people following Him. This was a great company of people. Where did they all disappear to when He was crucified?

Next lesson, we begin chapter 5 (The Sermon on the Mount). Read chapter 5, five times.

## Matthew 9 Questions

1. What did Jesus hear had happened to John before He went into Galilee?
2. When John's ministry ended, what happened to Jesus' ministry?
3. Jesus' ministry beginning in a spiritually dark place, showed what?
4. Jew and Gentile alike would have to receive Jesus, not through the law, but through what?
5. Galilee was an area similar to what, here in America?
6. Capernaum was near what body of water?
7. The people, which sat in darkness, saw what?
8. What negative thing was spoken about Nazareth?
9. What was the main occupation of people around the Sea of Galilee?
10. Where was Peter's home?
11. Why was this city destroyed later?
12. Name 3 special things that occurred near the Sea of Galilee.
13. Where is a prophet not accepted?
14. Why did the Jews believe they did not need a Saviour?
15. What message did Jesus preach similar to John the Baptist's message?
16. What two brothers did Jesus call to the ministry in verses 18-19?
17. How big was the Sea of Galilee?
18. What occupation did Peter have?
19. What does the word "Andrew" mean?
20. What did Jesus call them to do?
21. Who were the two sons of Zebedee that Jesus called?
22. They were, also, called sons of what?
23. What special name was John called by?
24. What wish of James' and John's mother did Jesus not do?
25. Jesus went about Galilee doing what?
26. What four kinds of people were brought to Jesus for help?
27. How many books would it take to hold a list of Jesus' miracles?
28. Name five places the multitudes came from?
29. What will we study in chapter five?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 5:1 "And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him:" Matthew 5:2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,"

Let me set the scene for you before we begin. This mountain, spoken of here, was, probably, actually a high area next to the Sea of Galilee. By land, it would, probably, be between Tiberias and Capernaum.

Jesus was thronged by a multitude. Many followed Him, because of the miracles. He really did not exclude these people from the teaching. He just drew aside to an area where the disciples could sit closer up for His teaching (whether 12 or more, we do not know; it was, probably, many more.) The multitude could listen and glean from His words, if they were to the point where they could understand this deep teaching. In most instances, these people were familiar with the law.

The statement "when he was set", just means that He sat down in the midst of them to teach. They were eager to hear His teachings. This was more teaching than preaching. The statement "he opened his mouth", means that this was not for casual conversation, but rather, deliberate teaching on Jesus' part.

The location is now called the Mount of Beatitudes. A church has been erected to mark the place believed to be where this message came from.

The Sermon on the Mount is the greatest teaching of all time. If we could truly understand in depth what Jesus is saying, we would be able to discern the entire Bible from this. Let's remember that all of the Scriptures in this lesson, beginning with Matthew 5:3, are printed in red in the Bible. They are the spoken Word of Jesus Christ, Himself.

Matthew 5:3 "Blessed [are] the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven."

First let us look at the BE Attitude. What would we be? Jesus is saying in this very first verse of the Sermon on the Mount, can't you understand that you are not self-sufficient? Your spirit is unlearned and dependent on the Spirit of God. You are poor in spirit compared to the wealth of God's Spirit. Depend on God, and not on self. This was in direct opposition to the Jewish leaders, who thought they knew it all, because they had the law. The one thing we want to receive in this is: our wealth of spiritual knowledge is totally dependent on our faith in God's Spirit.

Matthew 5:4 "Blessed [are] they that mourn: for they shall be comforted."

There are two ways to look at this statement. In the physical, we mourn for our dead; and truly, we will be comforted on that great

day when we meet Jesus and our loved ones in the sky. Our mourning will be turned into joy.

There is another way to look at this, as well. When we think of our sins, we are grieved, and we mourn. Our comfort comes in knowing we are forgiven.

We mourn for those out of fellowship with God. Those, whether relatives or friends, who have not made peace with God. Our groanings for them do not go unnoticed. Our comfort will come, even in this life, as they come into the Church of Jesus Christ. No one likes the idea, of mourning, but when it brings us into salvation, how glorious it is!

Matthew 5:5 Blessed [are] the meek: for they shall inherit the earth."

This word "meek" has been misunderstood by so many. It really means humble, or mild-mannered. This is an attitude of the soul toward God and man, being willing to be instructed by God and willing to receive chastisement when necessary. This has nothing to do with going around with your head hanging down, or even allowing people to push you around. This is an humble heart, quick to understand, forgive, and obey God. We see, here, a blessing connected with it. "Inherit the earth"--Christians will reign with Jesus as His subordinates here on the earth the 1,000 year reign of Christ, and we truly shall inherit the earth. This is just another attribute of the Christian's humble heart.

Matthew 5:6 "Blessed [are] they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled."

This verse really needs very little explanation. Those who are trying to be in right standing with God (righteousness) spend a lot of time in the study of God's Word. The more we seek, the more we consume of the Word, the more we are filled. The only way we can be blessed is to know that these blessings are available, and to know how to act upon them. God's Word reveals the blessings. Enough said.

Matthew 5:7 "Blessed [are] the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy."

We reap what we sow. The Lord tells us that He will forgive our trespasses, as we forgive those that trespass against us (Mark 11:25-26). My cry is not for a just God, but for a merciful God. Our just reward is death, but through the mercy of God, we are saved by His grace.

Matthew 5:8 "Blessed [are] the pure in heart: for they shall see God."

I am so happy that this Scripture does not say pure in deeds. The Lord will judge our hearts on judgement day. I have said so many times, if we are truly saved, we no longer have the desire in our hearts to sin. Old things and desires have passed away, behold all things become new. It is our heart that has been made new. The Bible

says, For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. There is a spiritual seeing of God for the present when our hearts are pure, and there will be a physical seeing of God when we join Him in heaven. Those who are not pure in heart will spend an eternity in hell and will not be with God as the Christians will be.

Matthew 5:9 "Blessed [are] the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God."

Jesus is the King of Peace. The only true peace comes from Him. There will never be peace on the earth, until the King of Peace comes and brings His peace to the earth. If we are His children, we pattern our lives by His; and we, too, bring peace around us as He has given us His peace within. Truly, we are His children (followers) in His peace.

Matthew 5:10 "Blessed [are] they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven."

To be persecuted for something we have done wrong is one thing, but to be persecuted because we are, to the best of our ability, serving God is something else. Paul said, To count it all joy when we are persecuted for Jesus. The disciples and Paul thought it a great honor to be persecuted for preaching about Jesus. Most ministers today are not under persecution. Many are preaching what their congregation wants to hear. They are careful not to stir up the regular members by preaching against adultery, homosexuality, stealing, lying, coveting, and all the other sins of our day.

If you start preaching hard against pornography, rock music, drugs, alcohol, X-rated and PG-rated television and movies, and a total lapse of fellowship with God, you will see persecution. People do not want to be preached to about their sins. It is okay to preach about sins they are not committing. Just don't preach on "their" sins.

Many of the early Christians were martyred for the name of Jesus Christ. Are we that committed today, that we would proclaim Jesus even to the death?

Being a lady preacher, I have known persecution. It will not stop me from doing the will of God. With God's help, I will go on preaching what I hear in my spirit for the church. We must repent and renew our lives with the Lord Jesus Christ. Heaven is our home. We are just here temporarily.

The Scripture says, when we see great troubles coming upon the earth to look up and rejoice for our redemption draweth nigh. (This is not a direct quote.)

Matthew 5:11 "Blessed are ye, when [men] shall revile you, and persecute [you], and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake." Matthew 5:12 "Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great [is] your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you."

This is a continuation of verse 10. Most churches at some time have been called cults. It seems if you are a little more spiritual in your manner of worship, you are quickly classed as a cult. Someone said our church was a cult, because we had church more than once a week. Too many people judge something that they are not familiar with as being bad. They persecuted Jesus, because He didn't fit into their pattern. They will persecute the followers of Jesus for the same reason. If you are not under persecution, better take your spiritual pulse, something is, probably, wrong.

There is a great shaking in the true church today, only those who are truly sold out to Jesus will stand.

Matthew 5:13 "Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men."

Salt is a preservative. Christians are a preservative. This earth would already have been destroyed, if it were not for the few Christians here. If the Christians fall away, what will happen to the earth? That is just exactly what is happening today. Watered down Christianity is taking over. If the Christians do not raise up a standard, then all is lost. Lukewarm Christians will not make the final cut. God will spew lukewarm Christians out like lukewarm water. We need to live by the standards raised in the Bible. Sold out to God Christians are the salt of the earth. We must preserve the Bible and its standards, until Jesus returns. We must not compromise with the world.

## Matthew 10 Questions

1. What sea is this mountain near?
2. What 2 cities was it located between?
3. Many followed Jesus, because of what?
4. In most instances, these people were familiar with what?
5. What is this area now called?
6. What is the greatest teaching of all time?
7. Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be what?
8. What 2 ways can we look at this?
9. What shall the meek inherit?
10. What are 2 different meanings of meek?
11. What blessing is associated with meekness?
12. What will happen to those who hunger and thirst after righteousness?
13. For us to be forgiven, what must we do?
14. What does righteousness mean?
15. My cry is not for a just God, but for what kind?
16. What is our just reward?
17. In verse 8, who shall see God?
18. From what, does the mouth speaketh?
19. What shall the peacemakers be called?
20. Jesus was called the King of what?
21. Paul said count it \_\_\_\_\_ to be persecuted for Jesus?
22. Where is a Christian's home?
23. Why did the religious people persecute Jesus?
24. In verse 13, we are called what?
25. What is it?
26. If the Christians do not raise a standard, what will happen?
27. What kind of Christians will not make the final cut?
28. How long must the Christians be the preservative?



We will begin this lesson in Matthew 5:14 "Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid." Matthew 5:15 "Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house." Matthew 5:16 "Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven."

In these Scriptures above, Jesus is explaining that if we are Christians, then we have His Light dwelling within us. This Light of Jesus should be so brightly shining, that no one need ask if we are saved; but they should be quick to see the glow of this Light within us. This Light goes with us and should illuminate wherever we are. Sin has a way of being hidden in the darkness, but when we apply the Light, it does away with darkness. In St. John the first chapter, we read about this Light. John 1:7 "The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all [men] through him might believe." John 1:8 "He was not that Light, but [was sent] to bear witness of that Light." John 1:9 "[That] was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world." In Verse 4 of St. John chapter 1, it tells us who this Light is, John 1:4 In him was life; and the life was the light of men." You see, Jesus has brought the Christians out of the darkness and into His marvelous Light.

First John 1:6-7 tells it all. I John 1:6 "If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth:" I John 1:7 "But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin."

We are commanded to go out, and let this Light shine brightly, and win the world to Jesus. My prayer has always been that Church in the Wildwood, would be a Light set on a hill, so that those in darkness (spiritual) might see the Light and be saved.

In verse 16 of Matthew 5, says for people to be able to see the good works caused by this great Light being ever present in our lives.

Those of you who have been associated with me, know that I believe that Jesus (The Light) is the source of all energy. Physical light brings life on this earth. Spiritual Light brings everlasting life in heaven with God.

Jesus is the Light; we, Christians, are a carrier for the Light. We are not the Light. We are a holder that it can be seen in. We, Christians, must bring this Light of Jesus to the whole world in darkness, so that the Light can dispel the darkness. I could go on for days on this darkness and light. We will say some more in future lessons on this subject, but for now we must go on in Chapter 5 of Matthew.

Matthew 5:17 "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil." Matthew 5:18 "For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one

tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled."

The law in the Old Testament, and in fact the Old Testament itself, is a type and shadow of Jesus Christ the Lamb of God. The Word of God never changes. God's law (Old) is made more glorious in the New. The Old Testament constantly prophesied about Jesus coming to fulfill all prophecy. Jesus was the fulfillment. The law was not bad, just misunderstood. Jesus fulfilled the law and reconciled us to God the Father. Jesus was not, and is not, a destroyer; He is a builder.

Matthew 5:19 "Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach [them], the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven."

The law was given to make us realize our need for a Saviour. No one, except Jesus Christ, has ever been able to live a perfect life. There is something we have done, that we need forgiveness for. Jesus shed His precious blood to free us from sin and death. He paid the price in full for my sins and for your sins; therefore fulfilling the law. You see, God's law led up to God's grace. Like a part in a puzzle, it had to be there to complete God's plans.

In verse 19, we see that we must be careful what we preach and teach. It is bad to sin yourself, but it is worse to teach others that it is okay to break God's law. My message lately has been that Jesus is coming back for a church that is without spot or wrinkle. If you have a sin in your life, confess it, and get forgiveness. Take on the righteousness of Jesus Christ.

Don't try to make your own decisions anymore. Let Christ live in you. Let Jesus take total control, and then you won't make any mistakes. It is an awesome responsibility to be forming young lives. We must not only teach them of God's love, but also His judgement.

Matthew 5:20 "For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed [the righteousness] of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven."

As we said in the previous lesson, God does not want a lukewarm Christianity. Having a form of religion is not what He wants. He wants our hearts. The scribes and Pharisees were well known for keeping the law. God was not pleased with them. They had only a surface belief, a literal religion, not a spiritual. There will be people who never miss a Sunday going to church, who won't make it to heaven. They have a form of religion, but deny the power thereof as it tells us in Second Timothy 3. The walk with God that is pleasing to Him is the Spirit walk, being totally submitted to the will of God. To have the righteousness of Christ, it has to be seven days a week and everywhere, not just at church. They that worship God must worship Him in spirit and in Truth. Some who stand before Jesus to be judged will say: I cast out demons for you, I prayed for the sick for you, I did all these mighty things for you, and Jesus will say that He never knew them. He had their outward worship, but He didn't have their hearts. If it is a chore for you to go to church, please examine

yourself. Church should be a joy; and something we look forward to, not a bother.

Matthew 5:21 "Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment:" Matthew 5:22 "But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire."

Here, again, Jesus was telling us that the sin takes place in the heart. We have sinned already if we desire to kill, even if we do not carry it out. We should not call people names. First of all, we are not their judge, Jesus is their judge.

Notice here, it says do not call your brother "Raca". This is one Christian calling another this name. "Raca" means, o empty one, or thou art worthless. Christians are never empty; they are filled with the Spirit of Jesus. They are never worthless. Jesus thought they were valuable enough that He gave His life for them. You can see, if we were to call a Christian this name, we would be saying that Jesus was in error. You can readily see how dangerous this would be.

The word that was translated "fool", here, has a base meaning of stupid, blockhead, absurd, or dull. It is very important to be more concerned with cleaning up our own lives, than trying to criticize our brothers and sisters in Christ with their walk. Our careless conversation should be cleaned up. We should not call God's people names. God can take care of them without our help. I question how sincere a Christian is when he cannot clean up his language.

Matthew 5:23 "Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee;" Matthew 5:24 "Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift."

We must, as Christians, love our brothers and sisters in Christ as we do ourselves. God will not accept offerings made from a heart full of bitterness. If we take communion with bitterness in our hearts, we may drink sickness, and sometimes death unto our bodies. Quickly forgive everyone and particularly the brothers and sisters in Christ. God desires that we love each other. We do not love the sins in someone lives, but we love the person. Hate the sin and love the sinner.

Matthew 5:25 "Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison."

I really believe that Jesus told us that if there is any possible way to settle something out of court, do it. People have gotten into a rut, suing everyone for the slightest thing. Most things could be settled out of court, if people would just try. There

is no reason for two Christians to fight something out in court. The two should get together, and pray, and each give a little. These terribly expensive court cases could be stopped. Give a little if necessary, it will be cheaper than hiring an attorney. Praying together can solve many problems. Learn to forgive and forget. Christians should not subject themselves to the judges of this earth. There is one Judge and His name is Jesus.

## Matthew 11 Questions

1. In verse 14, Christians are called what?
2. When we let our light shine, what does the world see in our lives?
3. Who gets the glory?
4. Who is the Light spoken of by John in St. John?
5. Besides being called Light, what was He called?
6. If we say we are Christians and walk in darkness , what is said of us?
7. What cleanses us from all sin?
8. What has been my prayer about Wildwood?
9. What kind of light brings life on this earth?
10. What kind of light brings ever lasting life ?
11. Jesus said He did not come to destroy the law, but to do what?
12. The law and the Old Testament are a type and shadow of what?
13. Jesus is not a destroyer, but a what?
14. A teacher and a doer of the law shall be called what in heaven?
15. Why was the law given?
16. What is worse than sinning yourself?
17. What, besides God's love, should we teach?
18. What 2 groups must our righteousness exceed?
19. What were these 2 groups well known for?
20. What kind of walk is pleasing unto God?
21. What is wrong if we dread going to church?
22. What are 2 meanings of "Raca"?
23. The word translated "fool" in chapter 5, means what?
24. What kind of offering will God not accept?
25. If we take communion with bitterness in our hearts, what 2 things might happen?
26. In verse 25, we are to agree with adversaries quickly, so this will not happen. What is it?
27. What should 2 Christians, who have a problem, do?
28. Who is really Judge?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 5:26 "Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing."

This is in connection with last week's lesson, where we need to agree before going to court and being thrown in jail. Christians, as I said in an earlier lesson, should not be looking for reasons to sue someone. We need to live peaceably with all men.

Matthew 5:27 "Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery:"

This is one of the 10 commandments. In Old Testament times, the participants in this type of sin were stoned to death. This sin involves the body (the temple of the Holy Ghost) and is therefore a very serious sin.

Matthew 5:28 "But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart."

Our hearts will be judged, even more than our deeds. The desire to sin is worse than the act of sin, unknowingly committed. Premeditated murder is much worse than killing someone during an argument, because of the desire of the heart to murder. Our hearts are either desperately wicked and cause us to sin, or we have pure hearts which make us righteous in God's sight. The Bible says, whatever is in our hearts will come out of our mouth. We cannot speak both good and evil, because sweet and bitter water does not come from the same well. Whatever is in our hearts, is what we really are. Following Jesus, or Satan, comes from the heart. The whole thing takes place in the heart, as we read in Romans 10:9-10, Romans 10:9 "That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved." Romans 10:10 "For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation."

Matthew 5:29 "And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast [it] from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not [that] thy whole body should be cast into hell." Matthew 5:30 "And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast [it] from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not [that] thy whole body should be cast into hell."

These 2 verses above are fundamental. It would truly be better to be blind, and on our way to heaven, than to see clearly on our way to hell. It, also, would be better to be a cripple, and on our way to heaven, than to go to hell with a whole body. Sometimes, our good looks, or, our special physical abilities, may turn our heads and cause us to believe we do not need God. This, I believe, is what this Scripture is talking about. Anything that draws us away from God is bad.

Matthew 5:31 "It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement:" Matthew 5:32 "But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery."

When Jesus said this, it was about like it is now. People were being divorced for every little whim. Jesus was trying to show how important marriage is, and it is not to be taken lightly. Not being faithful has always been grounds for divorce, and in our day homosexual activity is, also, grounds for divorce. God, also, says do not be unequally yoked with those of unbelief. If your spouse is a Satan worshipper, then you must not stay with him. What Jesus was saying, is that marriage should be forever. Nothing, except something of a moral issue, should separate husband and wife. When they two are married, the Word says, they two become one flesh. Only a spiritual matter should cause a split. If we would just pray and ask God to send His choice of mate for us, we would save everyone a lot of pain.

Matthew 5:33 "Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths:" Matthew 5:34 "But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne:" Matthew 5:35 "Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King." Matthew 5:36 "Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black." Matthew 5:37 "But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil."

Our word should be our bond. Whatever we say, we must stick by it. The Bible says, that God swore by Himself, because there was no greater. We really cannot swear even by ourselves, because we are not our own. We have been bought and paid for. We have nothing to base our oath upon; for everything we are and everything we hope to be, is by the grace of God.

Matthew 5:38 "Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth:" Matthew 5:39 "But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also."

"Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord." (Romans 12:19) We do not need to take vengeance. The Lord will take care of it for us. If we will let Him handle it for us, it will heap coals of fire on their heads. Vengeance is a never ending cycle. Kill them with kindness; it hurts worse.

Matthew 5:40 "And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have [thy] cloke also."

Jesus was saying, don't argue over material things. They will pass away. We get ahead much faster by trying to out-give the other person. If we are generous, people will be generous with us, also.

Matthew 5:41 "And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain."

Do more than is expected of you.

Matthew 5:42 "Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away."

The Scriptures say, if we do these things, we will never have need. God rewards us openly for the good we do secretly.

Matthew 5:43 "Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy." Matthew 5:44 "But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;" Matthew 5:45 "That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust."

Jesus loved everyone in spite of their sins. He said, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do." If we are truly His followers, we can do no less. We should pattern our lives after His. We should be unselfish, kind, gentle, long-suffering, and giving.

Matthew 5:46 "For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?"

The world loves its own. To be different from the world, we must love the unlovely.

Matthew 5:47 "And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more [than others]? do not even the publicans so?"

He was saying, that is the way the world acts; giving to receive in return. Give with no hope of return, not just money, but of yourselves, also. Forget about self.

Matthew 5:48 "Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect."

No one in the flesh can achieve this goal, but this is the calling of a Christian; to try to be as near like Jesus as is humanly possible. Jesus is our example. We must try every day to be a little more like Him.

Next lesson, we will get into chapter 6. Read it 3 times.



## Matthew 12 Questions

1. How should Christians live with all men?
2. What is our body?
3. Why is adultery such a bad sin?
4. If a man looks at a woman with lust in his heart, what sin has he committed?
5. What will be judged more than our deeds?
6. Man's heart is either \_\_\_\_\_ or \_\_\_\_\_.
7. What kind of message will come out of our mouth?
8. Can we curse and bless both? Explain.
9. What 2 things does the Scripture Romans 10:9-10 tell us we must do to be saved?
10. Physical blindness would be better than what?
11. For what 3 things is it okay to get a divorce?
12. Man and wife are one what?
13. Why did Jesus say we should not swear by heaven?
14. Why not by earth ?
15. Why not by our own head?
16. Instead of taking vengeance, what should we kill them with?
17. If someone sues you and takes your coat, what should you do?
18. If someone asks you to go a mile with them, how far should you go?
19. Who are we told to love?
20. If we learn to love like this, who are we like?
21. Does God let the sun shine on just the good? Explain.
22. If we are Christians, what should our lives be like?
23. To be different from the world, what must we do?
24. In verse 48, we are told to be perfect. In the flesh, can we achieve this? What must we do?

Today's lesson, we will begin in Matthew 6:1 Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven." Matthew 6:2 "Therefore when thou doest [thine] alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward." Matthew 6:3 "But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:" Matthew 6:4 "That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.:"

Jesus was warning us that our doing must not be for a big show or to receive in return. When we help someone, it should not be for public acclamation. We should help, because there is a need, and not to benefit ourselves. See a need and quietly take care of it. Don't run and put it the paper when you feed someone. God sees everything we do, but more than that, He sees the reason why we did it.

Matthew 6:5 "And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites [are]: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward." Matthew 6:6 "But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly."

This Scripture does not mean not to pray in church. It just means don't pray, just so men can say, what a beautiful prayer you prayed. The most effective prayers are when we seek God by ourselves, having nothing to gain but fellowship with Him. Every one should have a place to go and pray to God alone. Prayer is just talking to God. The words we say are really unimportant. God knows the desires of our hearts before we say a word. He just loves for us to come to Him to visit, with no ulterior motives. When we pray, we must be quite part of the time and let God speak to our spirit. God does not want us to ever be ashamed to pray. Just talk to God. He will listen and answer your prayer. Be sincere.

Matthew 6:7 "But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen [do]: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking." Matthew 6:8 "Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him."

In these verses above, Jesus was saying, talk to God, don't memorize a prayer and say it every time. Tell God what is in your heart. Tell Him you love Him and need His help.

Probably, the most famous prayer in all the world is the prayer Jesus taught them to pray here. Most people misunderstand what he was saying. We all memorize this prayer, and say it without having the vaguest idea what it meant. If you will notice in verse 9, Jesus said "After this manner therefore pray ye." He did not say, pray this prayer. He was showing the disciples, and us as well, the way to get results from our prayers.

Matthew 6:9 "After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name."

Let's stop and see what Jesus was trying to tell us. First, recognize God for who He is (our Father). Worship Him before going on. Speak to Him with reverence.

Matthew 6:10 "Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as [it is] in heaven."

God is not just Supreme Ruler of heaven, but of this earth, as well. We must say as Jesus said, "not my will but thine". We should be looking forward to God's kingdom being set up on this earth.

Matthew 6:11 "Give us this day our daily bread."

God will take care of our needs one day at a time. The Bible said take no thought for tomorrow. Live each day one day at a time.

Matthew 6:12 "And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors."

We all want the first part of verse 12, but few want the last. We must forgive to get forgiveness.

Matthew 6:13 "And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen."

Our lusts cause us to be tempted. We should ask each day to let the blood of Jesus wash over our minds and our beings so the devil cannot attack us in these areas. God will deliver us from evil, but we must realize our need for His help and use it. Just as the prayer begins with praise and recognition of God for what He is, it ends with praise and recognition. "Amen" means so be it.

Matthew 6:14 "For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you:" Matthew 6:15 "But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses."

All through the Bible we see statements like the one above. "Judge not, that ye not be judged" Etc.

Matthew 6:16 "Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward." Matthew 6:17 "But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face;" Matthew 6:18 "That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly."

Fasting involves more than giving up food for a day or two. A fast is a solemn time of separation from worldly things of all kinds. For a fast to be effective, it must be a fast that God encouraged you

to do for some specific prayer request to be answered. The time that would ordinarily would be watching tv or fixing lunch, or 1,000 other little things, should be spent studying your Bible and praying. During a fast, God is your source. Many types of illness require fasting. When the disciples came to Jesus and asked why they could not heal someone, Jesus said, this type comes out by prayer and fasting.

When you fast, it is a serious time with God and Him alone. We fast to show sincerity. God will honor a fast, if we are sincerely seeking. You may fast one meal, one day, two days, three days, or as long as you have agreed with God you will fast. It is better to promise less. You must follow through, until God releases you. God does not like to play games. Some people drink juice during a fast, but a true fast is a total abstinence. Pray before you begin. Sometimes a preacher will call a fast for a church, but usually it is an individual thing. Don't brag to others about a fast. Just separate yourself for a season, pray and fast. It gets wonderful results.

Matthew 6:19 "Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal:" Matthew 6:20 "But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal:" Matthew 6:21 "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also."

We have seen in recent weeks the stock market dropping drastically and many people lost their life's savings. Some cannot cope with the loss of worldly goods, and have resorted to suicide. The sad thing is that you cannot end it all. We are eternal beings, and will spend an eternity somewhere. When we end our lives, there is some question where that eternity will be. Really, God does not care if you are poor or rich. God does not want us to put money ahead of Him, or His people. The sin of having money occurs, When we see someone in need, and will not help them. Love of money is a sin. Whenever you help God's people here on earth, you are laying up treasures for heaven. "Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, you have done it unto me." {Matthew 25:40} This is what God would have you to do, if He has endowed you with wealth. Be quick to distribute to those in need. Be content with what you have, whether it be much, or little. Help everyone you can, as often as you can. In heaven there are no thieves. Your heart and pocket book are usually in the same place. Put God first, and all other things will fall in place.

Next lesson, we will begin in verse 22.

## Matthew 13 Questions

1. When you do alms, you can lose your reward if you do what?
2. What do the hypocrites do?
3. What is said about the right and left hand?
4. If you do alms in secret, what will God do?
5. For what reason should we help someone?
6. God sees what we do, but more than that, what does He see?
7. When we pray, where should we pray?
8. The most effective prayers are what?
9. What is prayer?
10. We are told not to use vain repetitions when we pray. What do the heathen believe?
11. What is the most famous prayer?
12. What was Jesus telling the disciples and us about prayer?
13. What is the first thing we should do in prayer?
14. How should we speak to God?
15. God is supreme ruler of where?
16. How does God take care of our needs?
17. How should we live our lives?
18. How can we be forgiven?
19. What causes us to be tempted?
20. How should prayer end?
21. What does "amen" mean?
22. Who is spoken of as having a sad countenance when fasting?
23. What two things should we do, so as not to appear to be fasting?
24. What is a fast, besides giving up food?
25. What must we do for God to honor our fast?
26. Some drink juice fasting, but a true fast is what?
27. Sometimes a preacher calls a fast for the church, but it is usually what?
28. What can happen to treasures on earth?
29. Where should we lay up treasures?
30. God does not care whether you are rich or poor, what does God care about?
31. What must a rich person be quick to do?

We will began this lesson with Matthew 6:22 "The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light." Matthew 6:23 "But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great [is] that darkness!"

I have always believed that you can look into a person's eyes and see what is in his soul. When we are filled with the Light of Jesus Christ, this Light shows in our eyes.

Luke 11:34 "The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when [thine eye] is evil, thy body also [is] full of darkness." Luke 11:35 "Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness." Luke 11:36 "If thy whole body therefore [be] full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light."

The eyes tell so much about a person. If a person cannot look at you when he is talking to you, he is, probably, not perfectly honest.

When a person has heavily blood-shot eyes, he is sick, or has lost a great deal of sleep. You see, the eyes reveal a great deal about us. Jesus is the Light of the world. If Jesus lives within us, His Light should be evident in our eyes.

Matthew 6:24 "No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon."

This Scripture tells us that we cannot be worldly and serve God. We cannot follow God and Satan at the same time. God has been showing me, in recent weeks, that Jesus wants 100 per cent of our loyalty. Christianity is a 24 hour a day job, 365 days a year. The Scriptures say, that if we are lukewarm Christians, God will spew us out of His mouth like lukewarm water.

God will not compromise. If you drink, curse, run around, smoke pot, cheat on your neighbors, fuss, fight, lie, steal, or take God causally; it is time to repent. God will not allow worldly things to be a part of our lives and still belong to him. When we are truly saved, we do not have the desire in our hearts to do the things anymore. We are new creatures ("old things are passed away: behold all things are become new") (Second Corinthians 5:17)

My pet peeve is listening to Satan's music, which promotes every sin. If we are caught up in Satan's music, I seriously doubt that we are truly God's children. We cannot serve God and serve man. Only one can be our God. Decide which side of the fence you are on.

Matthew 6:25 "Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your

body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?" Matthew 6:26 "Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?" Matthew 6:27 "Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?" Matthew 6:28 "And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin:" Matthew 6:29 "And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these." Matthew 6:30 "Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, [shall he] not much more [clothe] you, O ye of little faith?" Matthew 6:31 "Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?"

In these verses above, Jesus was trying to tell us that we should not be concerned about material things. Fear is lack of faith.

When God told Abraham to leave Ur of the Chaldees and go to a land He had never seen, Abraham did not question how he would make a living. He knew if God told him to go, that God would provide for him.

When a person is called to the ministry, it seem the first thing that happens is you are out of money. God wants us to realize that He is our source.

All the care and planning that we do, can be wiped out with one market crash. We have to finally depend on God, anyway. Why not just start out that way and save time.

In Psalms 37, God said He will take care of the righteous. Psalms 37:25 "I have been young, and [now] am old; yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread." Psalms 37:26 "[He is] ever merciful, and lendeth; and his seed [is] blessed." Psalms 37:28 "For the LORD loveth judgment, and forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever: but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off." Psalms 37:29 "The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein for ever."

Be sure to read all of chapter 38 of Psalms all the way through several times. It is a real encouragement to believers. God's plan has always been to bless the believers not just spiritually, but financially, as well. We just need to trust God completely. Work diligently and expect miracles. The main word in this is TRUST. It goes beyond faith. The Scriptures, in Matthew above, are positive statements letting us know that God cares about our needs.

In Luke 12:31, we see what we must do to have our needs met. Luke 12:31 "But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you." Luke 12:32 "Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom."

Matthew 6:32 "(For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things."

When it speaks of "Gentiles", it is speaking of worldly people. The people of the world are seeking wealth and fame in this life, and take no thought for the hereafter. The Word of God says, that God knows the desires of our hearts even before we pray. God knows our needs; and if we put God first, and work, and do our very best, and not worry or fret, God will see that our needs are met. In St. John we read "Let not your heart be troubled". (John 14:1). It is an act of faith not to worry or be troubled. Throughout the Bible, God had blessed his people. Noah, Abraham, David, and Solomon. Lot, after he passed through tribulation was blessed abundantly. God takes care of His own.

Matthew 6:33 "But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you." Matthew 6:34 "Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day [is] the evil thereof."

One story in the Bible stands out to me so vividly in this. In Luke chapter 12, we read about a rich man who had an abundant crop. So much, he had no place to store his food. He pulled his small barns down and built bigger barns. He said to his soul, take it easy, I have much stored for the future; just eat, drink, and be merry. He was rich to himself, and not to God. He died that very night. You see, we do not know whether we will have tomorrow. Prepare for heaven, and earth will take care of itself.

Next lesson, read chapter 7 three times.



## Matthew Questions 14

1. What is the light of the body?
2. What makes your body full of light
3. If your eye is evil, what is your body full of?
4. What is my belief about looking into the eyes? What can you see?
5. What chapter in Luke verifies what we have learned here in verses 22 and 23?
6. Matthew 6:24 tells us, no man can serve whom? (2)
7. Jesus is coming back for what kind of church?
8. In verse 25, we are told 3 things to take no thought for. what are they?
9. What are a few sins God will not allow in our lives?
10. What are two things God told us to compare and see how foolish it is to worry?
11. What is fear?
12. Who is our source?
13. In the 37th chapter of Psalms, what does God say about His own?
14. Why did I tell you to read Psalms 37?
15. What is the main word in this?
16. If ye seek the kingdom of God first, what happens?
17. What is meant by "Gentiles" ?
18. Name at least four people God blessed?
19. Should we plot and plan for the future here on earth?
20. What kind of a man is described in Luke 12?
21. When he had all the extra food, did he give the access to the poor?
22. What did he say to his soul?
23. What happened to him?
24. What should we prepare for?
25. What will take care of itself?

In this lesson, we will begin in Matthew 7:1 "Judge not, that ye be not judged." Matthew 7:2 "For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again."

This Scripture above is not saying not to ever judge, but rather is saying with whatever severity you judge someone else, God will judge you. We cannot, even if we wanted to, be someone else's judge. Jesus is the final Judge, and each person shall stand before Him in judgement. We must not condemn someone else for smoking, if we smoke. We must not tell someone God will not forgive them for overeating, if we over eat. We need to examine ourselves and get forgiveness for our own sins, before we start pointing them out in someone else.

God expects us to consider, in ourselves, if someone is truly of God, before we blindly follow him. It is not for us to say whether he is saved or not. That is between him and God. What ever we might say is just our opinion.

The Bible says, if we know one of our brothers or sisters is involved in sin, go to him and tell him. If he does not listen, take a witness. Then, if he does not listen, stop fellowshiping with him. Even then, whether God forgives him or not, is not our business. The only judgement that is allowed is whether we should fellowship with him or not. Jesus is the final Judge of his outcome.

Matthew 7:3 "And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?"  
 Matthew 7:4 "Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam [is] in thine own eye?"  
 Matthew 7:5 "Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye."

One lesson in the Bible comes so clearly to mind in all of this. The religious people of the day brought the woman (caught in the very act of adultery) to Jesus to stone her to death. Jesus told them anyone that was without sin cast the first stone. Jesus then leaned over and wrote something in the sand, (I believe He wrote the sins of those self-righteous people). Of course, they all left the woman. Jesus told the woman that He did not condemn her, and to go and sin no more. This is the most vivid example of this Scripture above.  
 (John 8:3-11)

Ministers and people proclaiming Christianity need to live clean lives, not giving even the appearance of evil. Then, through love and concern, we can encourage others to clean their lives up; not through condemnation, but love.

Matthew 7:6 "Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you."

"Dogs", in the sense above, are low moral and low character people, who have no intention of coming to Christ. It is as if the lesson to be learned here is saying: when you see there is no hope to regenerate them, leave them in their own mire of sin. Do not get in there with them and let them destroy you and the treasures (spiritual) that you have obtained from God. Don't stay around and listen to them blaspheme your Saviour. Do not wallow in the sin (mud) with them. It will not clean them up. It will dirty you up.

Matthew 7:7 "Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you:" Matthew 7:8 "For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened."

We have not, because we ask not. When we ask God for anything, in Jesus' name, God hears us. Actually, just praying in the name of Jesus, recognizes Jesus for who He really is. If you trully search for God, you will find Him. God is always there, just waiting for us to take one step toward Him, and He will do the rest. God is not hard to find. Just pray and read the Bible, and you will find, that He is with you all the time. In fact, invite him inside of you, and He will be in you always.

Matthew 7:9 "Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?" Matthew 7:10 "Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?" Matthew 7:11 "If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?"

Parents love their children and will give them freely all the things that they have to give. Human love is not even closely compared to the great love that God has for mankind. Man's love is conditional. God's love is unconditional, expecting nothing in return. God loved us while we were yet in sin, so much he gave His only begotten Son to a cruel death on the cross, that we might be saved. It is such a little thing, in comparison, for God to answer our prayers. So little is required of us. Just believe on Jesus Christ as our Saviour.

Matthew 7:12 "Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets."

Here, again, we see that we should expect the same kind of treatment that we give. Giving is very much a part of receiving.

Matthew 7:13 "Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide [is] the gate, and broad [is] the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat:" Matthew 7:14 "Because strait [is] the gate, and narrow [is] the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it."

We all know it is easy to sin. The world is full of sin of every kind. I heard a lady say that a book will lay on the shelf and never be sold, unless it had sex and violence in it. The television set, which has been some people's God, is just not fit to watch. News

programs, ball games, and maybe one or two of the game shows are just about the only shows that do not teach us new ways to sin. Little girls have no idea what a real marriage is. Young girls think marriage is a long honeymoon. They base what they think marriage is from the absurd episodes in the soap operas. They have gotten so popular that they are now on night television.

Even on a show that doesn't have nakedness, there is cursing, and every other kind of sin imaginable. The commercial breaks have Satan's music trying to sell you some product. Mind control is ardently practiced. There is even some woman offering to read your horoscope advertised. (Nearly everyone of the numbers you can call that is given for your month, has the number "666 (mark of the beast) in it". Even this one thing should tell you that there is something wrong. God warns us in all sorts of ways. We seldom heed His warnings.

I believe that alcoholic beverages are sold in half the places that sell milk and groceries. Young people's heroes advertise beer and whisky, and cause the young people to believe it is okay.

If we do not discipline ourselves to walk the walk with Christ, then yes, we will wallow around on the wide road which leads to our destruction.

In 1 Thessalonians chapter 4, the whole chapter calls us to Godliness; following the narrow path. I will use one little verse that tells it all. I Thessalonians 4:7 "For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness."

God does not want someone lackadaisical following Him. He wants people with pure intentions, with their eyes constantly on the goal (Him), steadfastly staying in the path of righteousness, which leads to everlasting life with Him.

Next lesson, we will begin at verse 15.

## Matthew 15 Questions

1. Why should we not judge?
2. Does this mean that we should never, in any circumstance, judge?
3. Who shall we stand before in judgement on Judgement Day?
4. What must we be careful to do, before we start telling someone else what to do?
5. If we know a brother or sister in Christ is involved in sin, what should we do?
6. What is the second thing we should do?
7. If there is no chance of changing him, what should we do?
8. What shall we do before we cast out a mote in our brother's eye?
9. What sin was the woman caught doing that the religious people brought to Jesus?
10. Under the law, what was the punishment for this sin?
11. What did Jesus say to the accusers?
12. What do you think Jesus wrote in the sand?
13. What did Jesus say to the woman?
14. What kind of lives should ministers live?
15. When we help people clean their lives up, how should we do it?
16. In verse 6, what is meant by dogs "dogs"?
17. Should we enter the mire with them to get them saved? Why?
18. In verse 7, "ask", and what will happen?
19. Seek, and ye shall what?
20. Knock and what happens?
21. We have not because, we \_\_\_\_.
22. To have good with us all the time, what two things should we do?
23. If the son asks for bread, will the father give him what?
24. If we, being evil, give good gifts to our children, what will God do to His children.
25. Describe man's love?
26. Describe God's love?
27. What is the "law and prophets", in verse 12?
28. What kind of gate leads to destruction?
29. Which type leads to life?
30. What, in our homes, has become some people's God?
31. Why should children's heroes not sin?
32. In verse 7 of 1 Thessalonians, what has God called us to do?

We will begin our study with Matthew 7:15 "Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves."

There has never been a time, in the history of mankind, when there were more false prophets. There are even men today proclaiming they are Jesus. We have mentioned it before, but it bears mentioning again. We are not to believe these people. There will be no question whether it is Jesus, or not, when he returns. He will appear in the eastern sky.

I really believe the Scripture above, may not really be talking about that though. You see, the people that this was speaking of, claimed to be Christians; but they were "in sheep's clothing". they were people pretending to be followers of Jesus Christ. They had an outward form of Christianity, but their hearts were wicked. They came to a church, worked hard in it, appeared to be supporting the teachings, and then started dropping a word here and there that caused confusion. They were harder to detect than the enemy from without, because they appeared to be Christians. ("Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof"). 2 Timothy 3:5 In second John, the lady was warned about deceivers. These deceivers did not believe that Jesus was God in the flesh. II John 1:7 "For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist." II John 1:9 "Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son." II John 1:10 "If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into [your] house, neither bid him God speed:"

Sometimes, we wonder just how we can tell who is of God and who is not. The first thing is: do they believe that Jesus is Immanuel (God with us) (God in the flesh)? The second thing is: What kind of fruit do they bear?

Matthew 7:16 "Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?" Matthew 7:17 "Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit." Matthew 7:18 "A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither [can] a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit."

Everyone has heard the Scripture "Bring up a child in the way he should go: when he is old, he will not depart from it." (Proverbs 22:6). If you teach a very small child not to steal, chances are that he will never steal. This goes for all sins. The earlier we learn not to sin, the better off we are.

We usually are what we have trained ourselves, and our parents have taught us to be. Environment has a great deal to do with what we become. A child, who is in church several times a week, will generally have better morals than someone who has never been exposed to Christianity.

Cursing, swearing, telling dirty jokes, etc. are many times a

habit that has been picked up at work or at school. The Bible says not to fellowship with those of unbelief, because we will all become like them.

Peach trees bear peaches, pear trees produce pears, etc. Apples do not come off a peach tree. We are all part of a family tree. We must be careful to pattern our lives after Jesus.

I have used the expression so often, if you plant an English pea; that is what you will get in return, not butter beans.

If we are rooted and grounded in the Word of God, and if we study the Bible and hide its Words in our hearts, then we will be able to use what knowledge we have to help others get saved. Some of us will be able to lead a few to God, and some will lead hundreds. We will be fruit bearers when we work to get people saved. We always influence them for the good or evil. We spoke of it before, we must not judge, but we can be a fruit inspector.

In verse 19, God tells us what will happen if we do not produce fruit for him. It is very much like having an orchard. We will wait a few years, prune the trees, fertilize them, work around them, and water them; but then if they do not produce, we will cut them down. That is what we see in verse 19.

Matthew 7:19 "Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire." Matthew 7:20 "Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them."

We can say all day long that we are Christians, but unless we do something about it, it is hard to convince God we are serious.

Matthew 7:21 "Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven."

You see, this is what we have been talking about in church. Many people pretend to be Christians, who have not sold out to God. Some come to church for the fellowship, some come to better their position in the community, and some come so that they can belong to something. None of these things will get us to heaven. God wants us totally, or not at all. Playing church will not get it. Jesus explains, here, what it takes. Our will must be turned over to God so completely that we, like Jesus, can say, "Nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done", (in my life). A TOTAL COMMITMENT TO GOD.

Matthew 7:22 "Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?" Matthew 7:23 "And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity."

The fact that they did these things was good, but why did they do them? Was it for great fame and a lot of money? You see, God looks more at the reason we did something, than the fact that we did it. If you have a million dollars and you give a thousand to God, you haven't

done much; but if you have thousand and give it all, then that is great. God knows you love Him enough to sacrifice self for Him.

Matthew 7:24 "Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:" Matthew 7:25 "And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock."

You see, we must not only hear the Word, we must do it, as well. We can go to church and listen, until we are old and gray, but it does us no good at all, until we start applying the things we learn to our own lives. A wise man knows the answers to life's problems, because he searches them out in the Bible and applies them to his own life. The "Rock" that we must build upon is Jesus Christ (the Cornerstone). It rains on the just and unjust. Problems will come. The only difference is a Christian faces problems differently. We pray and ask God to help us through our problems. They do not overwhelm us, because our strength is not in ourselves. We depend on Jesus. We just roll them over on Him, and He takes care of them for us.

Matthew 7:26 "And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:" Matthew 7:27 "And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it."

It was the same "rain" (problem). You see, without a good foundation, we fall. We must have our feet planted firmly in the Gospel of Jesus Christ to be able to withstand in the terrible day that is already around us. Take your eyes off the problem, and get them on Jesus. Stand firm, claiming the Word of God as your personal strength. God is the answer. There is no other way.

These teachings of Jesus astonished the ones listening on that day, and are still astonishing today. He breaks with tradition. He emphatically teaches that our hearts must be right with God, not just go through a bunch of rituals. He seems to be interpreting the meaning of the laws of God, rather than changing them. People were blindly, systematically keeping the law without having the vaguest idea why they were keeping them. They were not truly feeling anything. God wants our hearts, not our formality.

Matthew 7:28 "And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine:" Matthew 7:29 "For he taught them as [one] having authority, and not as the scribes."

Jesus really did not tell them that the law was bad. He told them His interpretation of the law. He did have all authority. He wrote the law in the first place. His understanding was not earthly, but heavenly. When Jesus took on the form of flesh and dwelt here on the earth, He related to the difficulty in our lives truly being able to comprehend the law. I believe the Sermon on the Mount is a truly indepth explanation to us of what it takes for us to please God.



Next lesson, we will begin in chapter 8 of Matthew.

## Matthew 16 Questions

1. How will we know for sure that it is Jesus returning?
2. How do we know these false prophets will be in the church?
3. Inwardly, what are they?
4. Who are these false prophets pretending to be?
5. In Second John, who are the ones who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh?
6. In verse 9, it says, "Some people have not God". Who are they?
7. If you bid false prophets God speed, what will happen to you?
8. What two things tell whether a person is of God or not?
9. In Matthew 7:16, how will we know them?
10. Finish this quote, "Train up a child in the way he should go \_\_\_\_\_".
11. What one thing has a great deal to do with what we become?
12. Cursing, swearing, and dirty jokes are usually picked up where?
13. Why should we not fellowship with unbelievers?
14. What two things help us win people to Jesus Christ?
15. What happens to a tree that does not produce good fruit?
16. In verse 21, it says, "Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven". Then who will enter?
17. What does it take?
18. In verse 22, we read of people who have ministered to other people but are not saved themselves. Why?
19. Who gave the most, the millionaire who gave a thousand dollars or the poor man who gave a thousand dollars?
20. Jesus said, if you hear His words and do them, you will be like whom?
21. When the problems of the world came, what did this man do?
22. In contrast, what did the man who built on the sand do when problems came?
23. We can listen to God's Word until we are old and gray, but when does it become useful to us?
24. Who is the rock? The Cornerstone?
25. Why do problems not overwhelm a Christian?
26. Where should a Christian's eyes be fixed?
27. Where must our feet be?
28. What can we claim as our strength?
29. Name two people astonished by Jesus' teaching?
30. Did Jesus change the law?
31. Jesus taught them as whom?
32. What does the author believe the Sermon on the Mount is?

Matthew 8:1 "When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him."

This "mountain", here, was on the shore of the Sea of Galilee. Jesus had just finished the Sermon on the Mount. A "multitude" was, probably, over 1,000 people, and since the Scripture included "great", then it could have been several thousand.

Matthew 8:2 "And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean."

A "leper" was an outcast from the community. They had to cry, "unclean", when anyone came near them. This, they thought, was contagious. Also, they felt that leprosy was a curse from God. Why a leper would even be allowed to be with this multitude was a mystery in itself. We could learn a lot from this "leper". The first thing he did, before he asked for anything, was worship Jesus. He called Him, "Lord". Then he said, with no doubt in his heart, You can heal me. He knew beyond a shadow of a doubt, that Jesus could heal him. He had either heard from friends about Jesus healing people, or else he had been an eye witness of Jesus healing someone. When Jesus healed, He said, "Your faith has made you whole".

Matthew 8:3 "And Jesus put forth [his] hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed."

It just takes one touch from Jesus to heal. His answer was always, "I will". This man did not have to wait and hope. He was "immediately" healed. The statement "be thou clean", showed that the man had to accept the healing.

Matthew 8:4 "And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them."

When a leper was clean, the priest had to say he was clean, before he could take his place back in the community. This priest would certainly know there had been a miracle. This man was to follow the law, by giving an offering of thanks for the healing.

Matthew 8:5 "And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him," Matthew 8:6 "And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented."

A Roman centurion was a captain of 100 men. Capernaum was the home of Peter, near the Sea of Galilee. Jesus would later on tell the people of Capernaum that they had very little faith. This particular Roman had much faith. "Palsy" is a disease of the central nervous system, and there is really no cure for it. This would have to be a miracle. Hundreds of years have passed, and there is still no cure for palsy, outside of a miracle from God. This disease is tormenting. It

causes you to shake out of control.

Matthew 8:7 "And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him."

The answer that Jesus always gave was, "I will", as we have said before Jesus is never too busy. He was willing to go to this servant. A servant has the same importance as a king to Jesus. Notice Jesus did not say, I will try to heal him, but rather, "I will".

Matthew 8:8 "The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed." Matthew 8:9 "For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this [man], Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth [it]."

Even though this man had great worldly authority, he was fully aware that compared to Jesus, he was unworthy. In fact, we are all unworthy. It is only through grace that we are saved. He recognized the fact that everything and everybody was subject to the command of Jesus. There was no question about the authority of Jesus.

Matthew 8:10 "When Jesus heard [it], he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel."

Jesus was very impressed that someone, who had never studied the Scriptures, would believe. The learned scholars (scribes and Pharisees) were the worst doubters of all. Jesus came to the house of Isreal, but when they refused Him, He created a spiritual Isreal based on faith alone.

Matthew 8:11 "And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven."

The spiritual children of Abraham shall be from all the nations of the world. Their faith, like Abraham's, will be the saving factor. Galatians 3:28 "There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus." Galatians 3:29 "And if ye [be] Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

Matthew 8:12 "But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

Just because a person is Jew by birth, does not mean that he or she will go to heaven. This Scripture above, is saying, regardless of who your parents or grandparents are, without belief in Jesus Christ, you will wind up in hell. Darkness is the absence of light. Just to know total separation from Jesus would cause great anguish ("weeping and gnashing of teeth"). God does not have grandchildren, only children, Each person is expected to have his own faith and act upon it.

Matthew 8:13 "And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and

as thou hast believed, [so] be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour."

We can expect miracles according to the amount of faith we have. If we don't believe, nothing will happen. The bottom line was, this "servant was healed".

Matthew 8:14 "And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever." Matthew 8:15 "And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them."

Peter's home, as we have said before, was here in Capernaum. Jesus, probably, went there to rest from the crowd. The Scripture does not state the cause of the fever. She was sick enough to stay in bed. Just one touch of Jesus' hand, and the fever fled. It was such a miracle, she immediately went to work seeing to their physical needs.

Matthew 8:16 "When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with [his] word, and healed all that were sick:"

The Bible explains, in detail, how Jesus got rid of the evil spirits that possessed the bodies they were in. An evil spirit can come into a non-Christian, and actually control that person. I do not believe that a Christian can be possessed by a devil. There is no example in the Bible of a Christian being possessed by a devil. A demon possesses darkness. A Christian is filled with Light. Light does away with darkness. A Christian, who is full of the Light of Jesus, cannot be consumed by the darkness of the devil. I do believe a Christian can be tormented from without. but not inside. Take note, here, that the Word got rid of evil spirits. That should tell us something. Stay full of the Word of God. Take note also, that sick people are spoken of separately. He "HEALED the sick, and "CAST OUT" the evil spirits. Notice, also, that He healed "ALL". Let me say one more time, that because Christians are filled with the Light of Jesus, they cannot be possessed with devil spirits. They can be oppressed, but not possessed.

Matthew 8:17 "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare [our] sicknesses."

Isaiah prophesied that the Saviour would not only save our souls, but would heal our bodies. He actually took our diseases on His body on the cross. His "healing touch" did not just help way back then, but is still healing people today. In John 14:12 "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater [works] than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father." John 14:13 "And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son." John 14:14 "If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do [it]."

You see, Christians can pray to the Father in the name of Jesus, and He will hear and answer our prayers. The difference is Jesus healed in His own name. We heal in Jesus' name. It is the power

of Jesus (not our name). We just touch and allow His power to flow through us. Pray and believe in the name of Jesus and expect miracles.

Next, we will pick up in Matthew 8:18.

## Matthew 17 Questions

1. Where was the mountain located where Jesus taught the sermon on the Mount?
2. Describe a multitude.
3. What did a leper have to cry when near others?
4. What was the first thing the leper did when he saw Jesus?
5. What, besides a physical sickness, did most believe leprosy to be?
6. What name did the leper call Jesus?
7. How did Jesus answer him?
8. What does "be thou clean" show us?
9. Why did Jesus send him to the priest?
10. A Roman centurion was over how many men?
11. What type of disease is palsy?
12. Compared to Jesus, what was the centurion?
13. What and who are under Jesus' authority?
14. Why was Jesus amazed at the centurion's faith?
15. When physical Israel rejected Jesus, who did He create?
16. Where will Abraham's spiritual children come from?
17. Where, in the Bible, do we learn there is no male or female with God?
18. Where is outer darkness?
19. Does birth into a Jewish family insure your residence in heaven?
20. Will your mother's or father's faith save you?
21. How many great miracles can we expect?
22. What was the bottom line about the centurion?
23. Where was Peter's home?
24. What was Peter's mother-in-law healed of?
25. Can a Christian be possessed of the devil?
26. Tell what darkness represents.
27. What one thing did Jesus use to free a person from devil spirits?
28. Are sickness and demon possessions the same?
29. Is healing for today?
30. What Scripture answers this question?
31. Whose name must we use?

We will pick up at Matthew 8:18 "Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side."

The people thronged Him so greatly, that He was pressed from every side. Every so often, He went aside to rest and pray. This multitude, it seems, had followed Him from the time He had given the Sermon on the Mount. He needed some time alone. His Spirit was always ready, but His body got tired; just like ours do.

Matthew 8:19 "And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest."

Scribes were the keepers and registrars of all public documents. The "scribe" mentioned, here, was learned in the law. These men technically knew the rules in the Bible. Very few recognized Jesus for who He really was (the Messiah). This "scribe" had, probably, been among the multitude who heard Him preach the Sermon on the Mount and who saw Him do many miracles. Just as many Jewish people do even today, this scribe recognized Him as a great teacher and as a prophet of God who could perform miracles. The question is, did he recognize Jesus as God manifest in the flesh? Scribes were teachers of the law. It is so strange, to me, that they could not see that Jesus fulfilled the law in every aspect. This "Scribe" was like so many new Christians. They promise to follow no matter where or how hard the road gets, but when trouble come, they fall away.

Matthew 8:20 "And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air [have] nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay [his] head."

Jesus told this scribe just right off, if you follow me, it would not be easy. You might have to sleep outside and may not even know where your next meal would come from. Jesus does not promise an easy life even today to His followers. He just promises to take care of our needs, not our wants.

Matthew 8:21 "And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father."

From this statement above, It seems that this disciple, mentioned here, was not one of the 12, but, probably, part of the 120 who followed Jesus for a while. He was asking Jesus to let him tend to his business at home, and he would answer the call to the ministry later. We cannot put off the call of God for any reason. Even though this seems to be good enough excuse, we will see that God will not wait while we tend to earthly things.

Matthew 8:22 "But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead."

Here we must understand the religious significance of this statement. He was speaking of the spiritually dead. He was saying, you



cannot do anything for him now. It was too late. Salvation is offered to the living only. He told the man, go minister to others before they, too, die physically not knowing salvation. He, too, was saying, time is running out. Hurry!

Matthew 8:23 "And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him."

This was, probably, a ship on the sea of Galilee. It, possibly, belonged to some of the disciples, who were fishermen before Jesus called them.

Matthew 8:24 "And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep."

Jesus' body was tired. He was sleeping right on through the storm. The Sea of Galilee is well known for the heavy wind and boisterous waves. These storms come up suddenly and drown many fishermen. These disciples, who had fished on this see, knew how dangerous it could be.

Matthew 8:25 "And his disciples came to [him], and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish."

They knew where the help was. They knew Jesus could save them. The cry of mankind should be, "Lord, save us: we perish." Jesus is the only one who can save us, but we must cry out for His help. Jesus always listens to our cries, as He did these disciples.

Matthew 8:26 "And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm."

Fear is not of God. Jesus rebuked them for being fearful. Fear is the opposite of faith. Probably all this happened to make them realize they should act in faith, not fear. Nevertheless, He spoke to the "wind and the sea", and they both immediately obeyed the Word. Jesus has all power over everything, even the elements. We too, have power through the name of Jesus to speak to the elements. We must use the Word and command the weather to obey in Jesus' name.

Matthew 8:27 "But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!"

The amazing thing, to me, in all of this, is the fact that they were amazed. Jesus has been doing all these fantastic miracles, and they still did not know that He had power over the entire universe. They were right, truly he was not "man". He was God housed in the body of a man.

Matthew 8:28 "And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way."

This area, that was on the other side of the Sea of Galilee, is today the Golan Heights controlled by the Arabs. In Bible times, it was a very evil area. There were three accounts of men in tombs who were possessed of devils in three of the gospels. It appears that these were three men telling the same account of what happened. It appears that this was three men telling the same account of what happened. The only real difference in all three accounts, was one man telling the event said that there were two demoniac men. The others said that there was one man. Really it does not matter. It is a fantastic miracle, regardless of whether, one or two, men were involved. A legion can run from 1,000 to 5,000. One of the Scriptures states that in this particular instance, it was about 2,000. So you see, the number of devil spirits were so overwhelming, even for two men to have, that that was incidental. For that matter, this could be three different happenings. All we need to concern ourselves with, is the lesson we can learn from this.

Matthew 8:29 "And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?"

There are several things we need to take notice of here. These devils recognized Jesus. They had been in heaven with Jesus before they followed Lucifer. Devil spirits, or demons, are really fallen angels. When God threw Lucifer out of heaven, one third of the angels followed Lucifer, and became his demons. These demons were well aware that there is coming a day when they would be thrown into the lake of fire with Lucifer. That was why they asked Jesus, if He was going to torment them before the time. These spirits need a body to dwell in. If they cannot get a human, then they will settle for an animal.

Matthew 8:30 "And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding." Matthew 8:31 "So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine."

You see, the devils did not want to be disembodied. Being a spirit, they have to inhabit a person or an animal, because they did not have a body of their own.

Matthew 8:32 "And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters."

One word and they obeyed. Jesus just said, "go". The swine were driven mad by these devils, and rather than live with them, they committed hog suicide.

Matthew 8:33 "And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils."

Can you imagine how frightening it would be to be herding hogs, and suddenly, they ran and drowned themselves in the sea? Not only were they frightened, but think of the financial loss.

Matthew 8:34 "And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought [him] that he would depart out of their coasts."

You would think the people would be tickled to have someone as powerful as Jesus in their midst, but instead, they did not want Him and stopped him at the edge of town. The only reason that makes any sense at all would be, that this was a very evil city. Probably many demon possessed people lived in this city, and you can easily see why they would not want Jesus (the Deliverer) in their city. In St. Mark chapter 5, we read the same account (or at least a similar) beginning with verse 2.

Mark 5:2 "And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit," Mark 5:3 "Who had [his] dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains:" Mark 5:4 "Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any [man] tame him." Mark 5:5 "And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones." Mark 5:6 "But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him," Mark 5:7 "And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, [thou] Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not." Mark 5:8 "For he said unto him, Come out of the man, [thou] unclean spirit." Mark 5:9 "And he asked him, What [is] thy name? And he answered, saying, My name [is] Legion: for we are many." Mark 5:10 "And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country." Mark 5:11 "Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding." Mark 5:12 "And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them." Mark 5:13 "And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea."

This same report is in St. Luke 8:26-39

These three could be separate deliverances, because of so many similar details, I believe they are accounts of the same incident.

Next lesson, study Matthew chapter 9.

## Matthew Questions 18

1. Why did Jesus say, to depart to the other side of the sea?
2. What promise did the scribe make Jesus?
3. What job for the community did the scribe do?
4. What did scribes have to do with the law?
5. What did Jesus tell the scribe about his living conditions?
6. The disciple that wanted to go and bury his father was probably from what group?
7. What does the statement "Let the dead bury their dead" mean?
8. Salvation is for whom?
9. How did Jesus get to the other side of the sea?
10. When the storm was raging, where was Jesus?
11. What did the disciples say to Jesus about the storm?
12. What did Jesus do?
13. Why did Jesus rebuke them?
14. What is wrong with fear?
15. What should we do, if we are caught in a storm?
16. How many accounts of the demon possessed, whose demons went into the hogs, are in the Bible?
17. What difference is in the stories?
18. Is it important?
19. What amount is a legion?
20. Name at least two things we need to remember about these devil spirits.
21. Where were the devil spirits asked to go?
22. What did the swine do?
23. How did the people of the town feel?
24. What does St. Mark 5:4 show us about demon possession?
25. What was the name of the demons?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 9:1 "And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city." Matthew 9:2 "And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee."

Now remember, in our last lesson, Jesus had been asked to leave when He delivered the demoniac man. He didn't argue with the people. He just got in a boat and came back across the Sea of Galilee to more familiar territory. Many have seen His miracles and heard his teachings on the Mount of Beatitudes. When He arrived back, it seems some people were waiting. We discussed before that palsy is a disease similar to a short circuit in the brain and nervous system. This palsy had advanced so that this man was unable to walk. Not only did the man have faith that Jesus could heal him, but his friends had faith, as well (the ones who brought him). As we have said before, not all illness is associated with sin, but some is.

Matthew 9:3 "And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This [man] blasphemeth."

As we have said so many times in these lessons, they did not recognize Jesus for who He really was. They were familiar with the law and knew that it taught that only God can forgive sins. The reason they thought that Jesus blasphemed, was that they saw Him as a man. To impersonate God is blasphemy, but He was not an impersonator. He was, is, and always will be God.

Matthew 9:4 "And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?" Matthew 9:5 "For whether is easier, to say, [Thy] sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk?" Matthew 9:6 "But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house."

You see from the above Scriptures, that the scribes did not just come right out and accuse Jesus out loud. They were afraid the mobs whom Jesus had healed, would attack them, if they said anything to Him. These accusations were just thoughts in their hearts. Jesus knew their thoughts and their hearts, and spoke to the doubt there. This act was evidence of who He is and, also, of His power. When this power commands, it happens, as we see in verse 7.

Matthew 9:7 "And he arose, and departed to his house." Matthew 9:8 "But when the multitudes saw [it], they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men."

Again here, we see the fact that these people related Jesus to all the other prophets. They did not really know who He was. They did have the right idea. "they glorified God". This man had such a dramatic healing, that he walked home for everybody to see. Jesus had come from a childhood of obscurity to a time of popularity because of His miracles.

Matthew 9:9 "And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him."

Tax collectors were hated by the people. Matthew, we will learn later, was, also, called Levi. He was, probably, a man of means. He was surely a publican himself. Very little was written in the Scriptures about Matthew. It is accepted that this was the same Matthew that wrote the book of Matthew. Jesus was, probably, already acquainted with Matthew. At any rate, Matthew did not question when Jesus told him to follow him. He just obeyed. This call was even harder than most, because Matthew had to give up the opportunity to make even more money than he already had. He would lose his position of authority, as well. This shows that nothing is more important than following Jesus. If necessary, we too, should be willing to give up all, and follow Him.

Matthew 9:10 "And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples." Matthew 9:11 "And when the Pharisees saw [it], they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners?"

Here, we see Jesus associating with these hated Roman tax collectors and people who knew none of the Jewish law. Even if they did, they would not have practised the law; because they were idolaters. To the Pharisees, they would have been unclean spiritually. A Pharisee would have nothing at all to do with them. I believe these Pharisees were afraid of Jesus, so they asked the disciples. Jesus knew in His heart their evil intentions, and instead of letting the disciples answer this accusation, He answered for Himself.

Matthew 9:12 "But when Jesus heard [that], he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick." Matthew 9:13 "But go ye and learn what [that] meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."

Righteous people are already saved. They do not need to be saved. If you are not sick, you do not need to go to the doctor. Jesus did not come to change the law, He came to fulfill the law. Self righteous is different from righteous. To be righteous, we must be in right standing with God. Jesus brought the message of hope to a dying and sinful world. He provided the way out for those who were lost. His message is a message of good news (gospel). When He said He would have mercy and not sacrifice, I believe it meant, He provided the sacrifice for us. He is the perfect Lamb sacrifice. Through His mercy and grace, we receive it. Not of ourselves that we might boast, but through faith in Him.

Matthew 9:14 "Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?"

We must remember that Jesus is the Groom of the bride of Christ. There is no mourning and sadness preparing for a wedding. John the Baptist preached repentance and people who are repentant weep and mourn. You can

easily see why John's disciples would fast. They were repenting, seeking for the Saviour. The Pharisees remind me of some religions today. They believe you have to do specific things to be saved (penance). The followers of Jesus were rejoicing and happy, because the salvation that Jesus offered was a free gift. As long as the gift was there, it was hard to be sorrowful.

Matthew 9:15 "And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast."

You see, when Jesus is not here with us physically, we will be as John's disciples. It will be necessary to fast for strength and power from God. We are all in a state of mourning now, waiting for that great day when the Groom will come for His bride.

Matthew 9:16 "No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse." Matthew 9:17 "Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved."

This was a very profound statement, that we will, probably, never be able to fully understand, until the Lord returns. My best understanding is that Jewish people did not accept the teachings of Jesus, because they were so full of the law, there were no room for the Spirit. To me "putting new wine into new bottles" was speaking of the Christians being filled with the Holy Spirit (wine) and being saved. This putting the material together, new and old, could be speaking of how hard it is for the Jews and Gentiles to worship together. If a group of new Christians try witnessing to Jewish people, they will listen, if you call Jesus the Messiah. We, Christians, are looking for our Saviour; the Jews are looking for their King. The same, but just two different views of Him.

Matthew 9:18 "While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live." Matthew 9:19 "And Jesus arose, and followed him, and [so did] his disciples."

The man who came was of some importance in the community. They called him a "ruler". He had great faith. Even though his daughter had been pronounced dead, he knew Jesus could raise her from the dead.

Jesus did not answer him. He just went with the man and took the disciples with Him. Great faith brings great results.

Matthew 9:20 "And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind [him], and touched the hem of his garment:" Matthew 9:21 "For she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole." Matthew 9:22 "But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour."

Even though Jesus was headed to restore the little girl, He was still interested in helping others along the way. This woman's belief was great, and she was not disappointed. Even touching the hem of His garment could totally restore, as it did for her. Other accounts of this story tell us she had spent everything she had, on worldly physicians. Just one touch of Jesus' garment, and she was whole. Aside from this, there is one thing we need to note here. Some people think that women are children of Satan. Jesus called her "daughter", showing that she, like all other Christian women, are children of God.

Matthew 9:23 "And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise," Matthew 9:24 "He said unto them, Give place: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn." Matthew 9:25 "But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose." Matthew 9:26 "And the fame hereof went abroad into all that land."

These "minstrels" were paid mourners. Jesus was about to stop their wages. No paid mourners would be necessary. They laughed; but Jesus had the last laugh. This dead girl arose. Jesus is the resurrection and the life. He raises every one of us from the dead and gives us life. The fame would spread rapidly. Who was this, that He could raise the dead? Notice Jesus put the doubters out before He raised her.

We will begin next lesson with verse 27.



## Matthew 19 Questions

1. What did Jesus say to the man sick of the palsy?
2. What did the scribes say within themselves about Jesus?
3. What did Jesus say of the scribes?
4. What was Jesus showing them that He had power on earth to do?
5. What instruction did Jesus give the sick of the palsy?
6. What did the multitude do, when they saw this miracle?
7. What did Matthew have before Jesus called him?
8. Who ate with Matthew and Jesus?
9. Who did Jesus say needed a physician?
10. What did Jesus say He would have in place of sacrifice?
11. Who has Jesus called to repentance?
12. Why did the disciples of Jesus not fast?
13. Tell your opinion of what putting new wine in old bottles mean?
14. Tell your opinion of what putting a piece of new cloth in an old garment means?
15. Why did the ruler come to Jesus and worship him?
16. How long had the woman had the issue of blood?
17. What had the woman said within herself.
18. What did Jesus tell the woman had made her whole?
19. What were minstrels doing in the ruler's home?
20. What did Jesus tell them to do? Why?
21. What happened to the girl?
22. What were the results?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 9:27 "And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, [Thou] son of David, have mercy on us."

At this point, Jesus had just healed the incurably sick woman of the issue of blood, and had raised the young girl from the dead. We read in the last lesson that the story of these two miracles had spread throughout the land. No wonder these two blind men followed Him. Here, again, was another impossible situation. These men believed that Jesus was their only help.

Matthew 9:28 "And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord." Matthew 9:29 "Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you." Matthew 9:30 "And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See [that] no man know [it]." Matthew 9:31 "But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country."

Jesus (in nearly every instance), when He healed someone, would say your faith has made you whole (or something very near to that statement). It seems that our faith in something happening has a great deal to do with it coming to pass. Jesus asked them, "believe ye that I am able to do this?" Then He healed them. Faith is one thing that pleases God. The Scripture says that without faith, it is impossible to please God. What is faith? We read in Hebrews 11:1 "Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen."

You see, if you could see the evidence, it would be fact, not faith. Some ministers will tell you to shut your eyes and see your prayer request happening in your mind. That is not really what faith is. Faith is when we pray, and ask God for something, and then trust God with all the details, never doubting in our hearts that God is able to do more than we can ask, or think. I believe these two blind men had that kind of faith. They came to Jesus, believing that He would restore their sight, and He did. They did not follow His instructions not to tell anyone. If they were blind, and could suddenly see, there would be no way to keep them from telling the good news. There is another way to look at this, also. Before a person is saved, they are spiritually blind. When they seek out the Lord Jesus, it is faith that opens their eyes. A new Christian is just like these blind men. There is no way not to tell the good news. Once I, too, was blind, but now I see.

Matthew 9:32 "As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil." Matthew 9:33 "And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel."

This person had been possessed of a devil. The devil spirit inside him, would not let him speak. When a devil spirit controls a person, he is totally under the control of the evil spirit. This man was helpless, until Jesus came along and freed him. As we studied

before, these spirits of demons, or devils, are under Jesus. When He commands them to go, they must obey. What a glorious thing to see anyone delivered from a devil spirit, but to see one who was dumb released to speak, was even more glorious. The multitudes realized this was no ordinary happening. Jesus had super natural power.

Matthew 9:34 "But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils."

Just as many churches today proclaim casting out devils is not of God. so did the religion of that day. Churches have a tendency to believe that anything not active in their particular church is not of God; even though it is prominent in the Bible.

Matthew 9:35 "And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people."

Jesus was many things to many people. He taught, preached, and healed everywhere He went. Even the Jewish people agreed that He was a great teacher, a great preacher-prophet, and a great healer. These were just manifestations of who He really is (God manifest in the flesh). These Scriptures above said He healed all. It is, interesting, to me that sickness and disease were spoken of separately. Sickness is like a case of the flu, or something like a short time virus, But diseases are like M.S., or some other terminal disease like cancer. At any rate, He healed them all. He brought the good news (gospel) to everyone, so they might be saved. He not only brought salvation, He is salvation.

Matthew 9:36 "But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd."

Jesus, looking at the multitude, saw individuals who were lost. They had no direction in their lives. They were weary of this world, with no solution. They had no one to lead them. Jesus felt love for them. He would become their Shepherd, who would lead them to green pastures. He would be their Leader.

Matthew 9:37 "Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly [is] plenteous, but the labourers [are] few;" Matthew 9:38 "Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest."

The Scripture above reminds me of the song about the harvest. Some of the words are: My house is full, but my fields are empty. Who will go and work for me today? It seems all my children want to sit around my table. No one wants to work in my field.

The harvest is really the end of the world. We, labourers, must hurry to reap the wheat. Many believe, as I do, that the Lord Jesus will be coming back soon and will take the wheat (Christians) to the great barn in the sky. We, ministers, of the Word must work for time is drawing very short to work. Those trying to get into the family of God must come soon, or be left behind. The 13th chapter of Matthew talks

about the seed that is planted by the Son of man. It tells of how it grows up with the tares until harvest time. The seed is planted, then someone comes in and waters it, but God gets the increase. The wheat that grows is symbolic of the Christians. Some plant the Word, someone else comes along and strengthens it, then after all is said and done that Christian belongs to Jesus. He grows in the midst of the world filled with evil people (the tares), but then at harvest time, Jesus comes to receive His own. The tares are gathered and burned. The wheat (Christians) are carried away to heaven to be with Jesus. I think verse 43 of the 13th chapter of Matthew says it all, Matthew 13:43 "Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear."

There is little time left to get the Word out. Everyone who can speak at all of Jesus, need to be about the Father's business. Work for the night is coming, when man's work is done.

Next lesson, study Matthew 10.

## Matthew 20 Questions

1. What name did the blind man call Jesus?
2. What did these two blind men think about Jesus?
3. What did Jesus ask the two blind men?
4. When Jesus healed, what did He tell them that helped them to be healed?
5. What is the one thing that pleases God?
6. What is faith according to chapter 11 of Hebrews?
7. If you can see evidence, what is it?
8. What, besides a physical healing of blindness, does this passage tell us.
9. What was really wrong with the dumb man?
10. What did the multitude say, when the dumb spake?
11. What did the Pharisees say about Jesus when the dumb spake?
12. What do churches today have a tendency to believe about churches who do more than they do in their own church?
13. Name three things that Jesus did in the cities and villages.
14. What percentage of people did He heal?
15. What is the difference between sickness and disease?
16. When Jesus saw the multitude, how did it affect him?
17. Who would be their Shepherd?
18. What was Jesus asking for in verse 37?
19. What is the harvest, really?
20. Who was the wheat symbolic of?
21. Who are the tares?
22. What happened to the tares at the end?
23. In Matthew 13:43, the righteous shall shine forth as what?

We will begin in Matthew 10:1 "And when he had called unto [him] his twelve disciples, he gave them power [against] unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease."

Here, we see the power to cast out demons and to heal all manor of disease comes through the name of Jesus. All healing and deliverance must be done in Jesus' name. Jesus healed in His own right. We heal in Jesus' name.

Matthew 10:2 "Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James [the son] of Zebedee, and John his brother;" Matthew 10:3 "Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James [the son] of Alphaeus, and Lebbaeus, whose surname was Thaddaeus;" Matthew 10:4 "Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him."

Let us stop here a moment and look at these disciples. Peter (rock) and Andrew (manly), his brother, were fishermen before Jesus called them, and their partners were, probably, James and John (sons of Zebedee; sons of thunder). "John" means Jehovah is gracious. John was called the beloved of Jesus. This John truly loved Jesus. He was the only one present at the crucifixion. Jesus entrusted His mother to John.

The name "Philip" means lover of horses. Bartholomew, some believe that he was the same as Nathaniel. Thomas was best known as "doubter". The name "Thomas" means twin, but it was not evident in the Bible who the twin was. We just studied about Matthew, the tax collector. His name means "a gift of Jehovah". James (not son of Zebedee) was believed to be the nephew of Mary (mother of Jesus). He was called James the less. No one knows whether this had to do with stature, or importance. This "Lebbaeus", or "Thaddaeus" means courage. Thaddaeus was, probably, the name he used in his ministry. Simon, the Canaanite belonged to the faction of the Zealots who were dogmatic about the Mosaic law. Judas Iscariot was the betrayer of Jesus. He also carried the purse.

Matthew 10:5 "These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into [any] city of the Samaritans enter ye not:" Matthew 10:6 "But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel."

You see from this, that Jesus tried to bring the message to physical Israel first. Even these disciples were instructed to minister to the house of Israel. Physical Israel had to reject this message, before it would be offered to spiritual Israel (Gentile believers).

Matthew 10:7 "And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand." Matthew 10:8 "Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give."

Jesus told them the message to preach. Since that was the first on the list of the things to do, we can understand from that, that salvation is the most important message. He did not tell the disciples, if you are able to; heal, cleanse, raise the dead, and cast out devils. He just said do it. Probably, one of the problems in our churches today is that we are preaching and leaving all these other things undone.

Matthew 10:9 "Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses," Matthew 10:10 "Nor scrip for [your] journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his meat."

You have to realize that this was the disciples' call to go to the mission field. They have no idea how to prepare. Jesus was saying, that the people they ministered to should pay the disciples' expenses. It would have to be that way, because they would not have time to work on the side.

Matthew 10:11 "And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence."

He said to find a good believing family, and stay with them while you were ministering in a town.

Matthew 10:12 "And when ye come into an house, salute it."

Matthew 10:13 "And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you."

A minister visiting with a family should speak a blessing on the house and family who lodged them. Jesus said, if you discover these people were not Christians, just take your blessing with you when you leave.

Matthew 10:14 "And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet." Matthew 10:15 "Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrhah in the day of judgment, than for that city."

There are 2 things we should note here. #1. Sodom and Gomorrhah did not reject the salvation message of Jesus. #2. They have already been severely punished for their sins. People who reject Jesus have a terrible fate awaiting.

Matthew 10:16 "Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves."

Jesus told them that even though they meant no harm to anyone, they would meet with great opposition. Some of the people would try to eat them alive. He said be careful, don't do them any harm; but just minister to them.

Matthew 10:17 "But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;"

The religious people would not accept them. "Scourge", probably, means whip. These "holier than thou" people would declare them not of God, and whip them publicly.

Matthew 10:18 "And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles." Matthew 10:19 "But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak." Matthew 10:20 "For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you."

This message that Jesus said to the disciples, here, is even true today. If you are bringing the true messages of God, the authorities will give you a problem even now. The Gentiles that were spoken of in verse 18, probably, meant the Roman magistrates. We really should not be concerned about what we say for the Lord, either. Whatever comes in our ears or in our mouths is the message God wants, not something clever we have worked up. God wants His Spirit to minister today. Ministers should not bring formal messages, but should ask God to speak through them.

Matthew 10:21 "And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against [their] parents, and cause them to be put to death."

This is not so much a problem, here, in the U.S. today, but this was surely a problem in Germany in W.W.II, and even today in the communist bloc countries. Abortion, here, in the U.S. is the closest thing we have. In some parts of China, the parents kill their child, if it is a girl. Parents, children, and families in general are lacking in natural affection.

Matthew 10:22 "And ye shall be hated of all [men] for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved."

The disciples truly were hated, and many of them were even martyred. I believe as much as for them, this Scripture is prophetically speaking of our day, as well. We will have to hold on to every ounce of belief that we have to endure to the end.

Matthew 10:23 "But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come."

Prophecy and the immediate were side by side here. Of course, the Son of man, here, was Jesus.

Matthew 10:24 "The disciple is not above [his] master, nor the servant above his lord." Matthew 10:25 "It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more [shall they call] them of his household?"

Jesus said, here, if they think I am evil, they will think my followers are evil too.

This one Scripture really encourages those from Wildwood who have



been so sorely accused of every sin.

Matthew 10:26 "Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known." Matthew 10:27 "What I tell you in darkness, [that] speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, [that] preach ye upon the housetops."

Ministers of the Word should only realize that what Jesus wants is an empty vessel that He can speak through. He has taught His people all through the ages through the parables, so that the world would not figure out with their minds the things of God. God is a Spirit. The Bible is Spirit. The Parables are Spirit. We have to be taught of the Spirit: not mind knowledge, but heart knowledge. When we ministers learn to depend on God for our messages to the people, we will hear in our ears what God would say to the church. It is not in our ability that we preach. It is God in us preaching.

In the next lesson, we will pick up in verse 28.

## Matthew 21 Questions

1. How many of the disciples did Jesus call to him?
2. Name the powers Jesus gave them?
3. What is the difference between Jesus' healings and the healings we perform?
4. Name the 12 apostles?
5. What does Peter mean?
6. What does Andrew mean?
7. Who were the sons of Zebedee?
8. What does John mean?
9. Which disciple was present at the crucifixion?
10. Which of the apostle's name means lover of horses?
11. Which apostle was, probably, a twin?
12. Which one betrayed Jesus?
13. Where did Jesus tell them not to go?
14. Who were they sent to first?
15. What were they to preach?
16. What other ministries were they to do?
17. Where would they get their necessities?
18. Where were they to stay?
19. What does salute mean, in verse 12?
20. If they do not receive, what should you do?
21. Give me two reasons it would be better for Sodom than a city who rejected this message?
22. He sent them forth as \_\_\_\_\_ in the midst of\_\_\_\_\_.
23. They were to be wise as what and harmless as what?
24. Why must they beware of men?
25. What does "scourge" mean?
26. When governors and kings stand you before them, what will you say?
27. Is it us speaking? Explain
28. Who were the Gentiles spoken of here, probably?
29. Who will rise up against each other?
30. Why will we be hated of men?
31. How long should we put up with troubles?
32. When you are persecuted, what should you do?
33. What did they call the Master?
34. What Jesus speaks in darkness, what are we to do with it?
35. Where?
36. If it is not our knowledge preaching, what is it?

We will begin in Matthew 10:28 "And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell."

Our fear of man is unfounded simply because he can do just so much to you. Our fear should be of God, who could send you to a burning hell. One of the biggest fears in our society today is fear of our own government, and particularly the I.R.S.; Probably, because most people do not understand the tax laws. Ninety percent of the time, the things we fear never happen. Besides, fear is the opposite of faith, and it is displeasing to God. Fear of God could be classified as respect, and that is very smart.

Matthew 10:29 "Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father." Matthew 10:30 "But the very hairs of your head are all numbered." Matthew 10:31 "Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

We think very poorly of ourselves, generally. God sees our potential. God is concerned about even the little things in our lives as well as the big problems. If He would go so far as to number even the hairs on our heads, He loved us very much. Man's worth to God is much greater than the worth of all the other things God created. Mankind was made in the image of God. Everything else was made for the use of man on the earth.

Matthew 10:32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.  
Matthew 10:33 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

In Romans 10-9, we read, "That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved." Romans 10:10 "For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation."

These Scriptures tell it all. We must open our mouths and tell everyone about Jesus. If we really love Him, we will. He loved us enough to die for us. We should love Him enough to live for Him. We can go to heaven, or hell, through the confession of our mouths.

Matthew 10:34 "Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword." Matthew 10:35 "For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law."

Never before in history has there been a time when parents and children were at more odds. Years ago, parents were treated with respect by their children, now most young people feel that their parents are out of tune with the way things really are.

Matthew 10:36 "And a man's foes [shall be] they of his own

household."

The strange thing about getting saved, usually, it happens one family member at a time. Usually, the one who gets saved has a lot of opposition from the family members. Even more than that, those baptized in the Holy Spirit have even more opposition from family members.

Matthew 10:37 "He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me."

You see, we cannot side in with our family against God. It is really not important to be in total agreement with family, but it is very important to be in total agreement with God. A few months ago, I heard of an ordained minister who had diligently tried to get his children in the church and living for God. With all the effort he had put out, they stayed in the world. This minister mailed his ordination papers back to the church head quarters and stopped preaching. He joined his family and gave up the church. This is the very thing that the Scripture is saying not to do.

Matthew 10:38 "And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me."

Each of us has a cross to bear. It must be the cross of Jesus, and not a cross of our making. The stronger you are in the Lord, the heavier the cross is. If we are not willing to bear the cross of Jesus, then truly, we are not worthy. He died for us on the cross: we just carry it.

Matthew 10:39 "He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it."

If we are living for this life and not preparing for eternity, then we really have no future worth having; if you are storing up treasures in heaven and forgetting about our selves here, we will have and eternity of joy in heaven.

Matthew 10:40 "He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me."

There is just one message. Salvation through Jesus Christ. If you are ministering that message, those who receive it, receive Jesus.

Matthew 10:41 "He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward."

If you receive the prophet, you are actually receiving the message he, or she, brings. If they are true prophets, they are elevating the name of Jesus. Salvation is the same for listener, as it is for the prophet.

Matthew 10:42 "And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold [water] only in the name of a

disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward."

The Bible says, if you have done it for the least of these, you have done unto to me (Jesus).

For the next lesson, study chapter 11 of Matthew.

## Matthew 22 Questions

1. If we are not to fear, one who can kill the body, who should we fear?
2. What percent of things we fear never happen?
3. What was the price of two sparrows?
4. What has God numbered on us?
5. Who will Jesus confess before the Father?
6. What does Romans 10:9 say?
7. With the heart man believeth to what?
8. If Jesus did not bring peace, what did He bring?
9. Who will a man be against?
10. Who will a daughter be against?
11. Who are man's foes?
12. If you love son or daughter more than God, what is your state?
13. Was the minister right in siding with his family?
14. What must we take up daily?
15. What is the difference in Jesus' cross and one of our own making?
16. If we lose our lives for Jesus, what will happen?
17. When people receive the message we bring, what do they receive?
18. If you receive a prophet, what will you get?
19. If you give a cup of water to a child in the name of a disciple, what will you get?

We will begin in Matthew 11:1 "And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities."

Jesus had sent His disciples out in the field so that they, too, could get people saved, healed, and delivered; He went to another area to minister without the 12.

Matthew 11:2 "Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples," Matthew 11:3 "And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?"

These disciples that John the baptist sent were John's followers. John was imprisoned at this time. John proclaimed the coming of Christ and actually baptized Jesus. Now, he seemed to be going through a trial himself. Like the disciples, John, probably, really expected Jesus to take physical rule of Isreal then, so he questioned, are you the promised one? Even the "voice crying in the wilderness" was discouraged and doubting there in prison. This is so difficult to believe after he had heard the voice from heaven, when he baptized Jesus.

Matthew 11:4 "Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:" Matthew 11:5 "The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them."

The Scripture that comes into my mind when I read this is John 14:11 "Believe me that I [am] in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake."

No one but the Spirit of God can perform these kind of miracles in their own name. Jesus was healing, delivering, and raising from the dead in His own name. Believers in the Lord Jesus Christ can do these miracles today, the only difference is that we do them in His name (the names of the Lord Jesus Christ). This same 14th chapter tells about this very thing. John 14:12 "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater [works] than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father." John 14:13 "And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son." John 14:14 "If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do [it]."

You see, just the miracles that Jesus did was proof of who he was (God manifest in the flesh). In Matthew 11:4, the one word that really stands out to me is "again". John undoubtedly had seen Jesus do these miracles before, but because John was suffering in jail he needed reassurance.

Matthew 11:6 "And blessed is [he], whosoever shall not be offended in me."

This just means you are blessed, if you are not embarrassed by the miracles Jesus did.

Matthew 11:7 "And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind?" Matthew 11:8 "But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft [clothing] are in kings' houses." Matthew 11:9 "But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet." Matthew 11:10 "For this is [he], of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

When John's disciples left, Jesus started telling the people who John the Baptist really was. The people expected Jesus to take up His reign then, and they expected the one who would herald His coming to be dressed in finery. Prophets were usually dressed in skins, not fancy clothes. Even today, the true messengers of God are not high and mighty by the world's standards. They just have a message to bring, and usually, they stay in the back ground. The message is what stands out. I truly believe that even now, we must prepare the way for the return of Christ.

Matthew 11:11 "Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he."

John was flesh and blood like you and me. Even though there was a great call on his life, he still had human frailties. He was a voice warning people of Jesus' arrival. He was not Jesus; he was just proclaiming His coming. No human should think too highly of himself. God the Father, God the Word, and God the Holy Spirit are the ones to be worshipped. No one else should be worshipped; no matter how close to God they seem to be.

Matthew 11:12 "And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force."

I believe this is speaking of the spiritual warfare that a Christian must go through to enter heaven. I cannot figure otherwise.

Matthew 11:13 "For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John." Matthew 11:14 "And if ye will receive [it], this is Elias, which was for to come."

In the 4th chapter of Malachi the 5th verse, we read the promise of Elias. Malachi 4:5 "Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD:"

Matthew 11:15 "He that hath ears to hear, let him hear."

You see people, who look at the Bible from the physical and not the spiritual standpoint, cannot accept this. Those who are seeing with the heart can. One translation says, one like unto Elijah.



Matthew 11:16 "But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows," Matthew 11:17 "And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented."

He was just saying that, whether it was a joyful message, or a sad message, people were not listening.

Matthew 11:18 "For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil." Matthew 11:19 "The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified of her children."

Jesus was saying John the Baptist came denying himself everything, and you said he had a devil. Jesus told them He was the opposite of John, and they still criticized. The Scripture indicated the reason they did not understand all of this was because of the scales over their eyes. The only kind of wisdom that we can understand is the wisdom that Christ gives us. If you eat, it must be unto the Lord. If you fast, it must be unto the Lord.

Matthew 11:20 "Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not:"

Sometimes, people are so grounded and rooted in their sins that there is no possible way to get them to repent. If Jesus couldn't do it, what makes us think that we can? Even with all the miracles He did, they did not repent of their sins and get saved.

Matthew 11:21 "Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes." Matthew 11:22 "But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you."

Both Tyre and Sidon were Phoenecian cities. Though evil abounded in this area, and they had been punished, still the miracles had not been prevalent there. The sad thing was when the miracles "were" done, the people quickly forgot what God has done for them. That is even so in our churches today. God does one miracle right after the other, and if it didn't happen in the last five minutes, we tend to forget. If we have come face to face with the opportunity to repent and be saved, and we reject it, we are without excuse before God.

Matthew 11:23 "And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day." Matthew 11:24 "But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee."

This was just another reprimand of a city that did not listen.

Matthew 11:25 "At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these

things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes."

I really believe this Scripture was saying that too much education by the world can get you to the point that God cannot reveal things to you, because you feel that you already know all that there is to know about the Bible. Some of the greatest Bible interpreters of all had no formal education. They were taught by the Holy Spirit of God. I am convinced that because the Bible is just one of many books studied, that a person gets confused which is the authority. If we could just learn to depend on the Holy Spirit to teach us, as Jesus did the early disciples, we would be just fine.

Matthew 11:26 "Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in thy sight." Matthew 11:27 "All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and [he] to whomsoever the Son will reveal [him]."

So you can easily see that only Jesus, His Father, and the Holy Ghost can really reveal anything to us. Head knowledge will never do. It has to be in our hearts and be a part of us for us to understand, and only God can give us that.

Matthew 11:28 "Come unto me, all [ye] that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." Matthew 11:29 "Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls." Matthew 11:30 "For my yoke [is] easy, and my burden is light."

Jesus' call has always been to those in need. The sooner we learn to lay our cares on Jesus, the better off we are. He can take care of all our problems, if we just depend totally upon Him.

For next lesson, study chapter 12.

## Matthew 23 Questions

1. After Jesus dispatched the disciples, what did He do?
2. Where was John when he heard?
3. What was happening to John?
4. Why is this difficult for us to understand?
5. What did Jesus tell John's disciples?
6. Who did Jesus preach to?
7. What does the Scripture say in John 14:11?
8. What is the difference in the ways Jesus healed and what we do today?
9. What is the criteria required for us to heal?
10. In John 14:13, who is glorified?
11. Quote John 14:14.
12. What was proof of who Jesus was?
13. Why did John need reassurance?
14. What did the people think about John's clothing?
15. What did prophets usually wear?
16. If these people of God are not the high and mighty, why does God send them?
17. Jesus said John was great on earth, but what about heaven?
18. Who was John?
19. What is Matthew 11:12 saying?
20. Who did Jesus say John was?
21. What causes a person to read a Scripture and not understand?
22. What 2 things did John come not doing?
23. What did the people call Jesus?
24. If you eat or fast, it must be unto whom?
25. Why was Jesus upbraiding the cities?
26. What would have happened in Tyre and Sidon, if the mighty miracles had been done there?
27. When do we become without excuse before God?
28. Jesus said the secrets of God are hidden from the wise and prudent and revealed to whom?
29. These Bible scholars, who had no formal education, were taught of whom?
30. Who is the only one who understands the Son?
31. What kind of knowledge is important?
32. Where can we find rest for our souls?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 12:1 "At that time Jesus went on the sabbath day through the corn; and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat." Matthew 12:2 "But when the Pharisees saw [it], they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath day."

These Pharisees were caught up in the law. They did not realize that the Word of God had taken the form of flesh, and thiwais He that was walking through the corn field. If you will, the fulfilled law. These Pharisees were so caught up in the "thou shalt nots" in the Bible, they had no time to do anything for God.

Matthew 12:3 "But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungred, and they that were with him;" Matthew 12:4 "How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shewbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests?"

You see David, the beloved of God, truly understood God. God is not out to get us. God is our very best friend and knows when we are hungry and thirsty. He will make a way for us to meet our needs, not our wants.

Matthew 12:5 "Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless?"

You see, what Jesus was trying to get them to do was to understand the "spirit" of the law, and not the "literal" law.

Matthew 12:6 "But I say unto you, That in this place is [one] greater than the temple."

Jesus was trying to explain that the building is not what we should worship. We are to worship God with our spirit.

Matthew 12:7 "But if ye had known what [this] meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless." Matthew 12:8 "For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day."

You see, if they truly understood God, they would have realized who Jesus was and would have not criticized Him for anything. You see, He was not subject to their ordinances.

Matthew 12:9 "And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue:" Matthew 12:10 "And, behold, there was a man which had [his] hand withered. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath days? that they might accuse him."

You see, these religious people were trying to find some reason to get rid of Him. They knew that Jesus would not let the sabbath keep Him from helping someone in need.

Matthew 12:11 "And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift [it] out?" Matthew 12:12 "How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath days."

He was telling these people, in a way that they could understand, what He was doing. They had sheep, and He knew that if they had a sheep missing, they would go and find him, even on the sabbath. Jesus is our Shepherd, and we are His sheep. He takes care of His sheep.

Matthew 12:13 "Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched [it] forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other."

Obedience to Jesus brings restoration. This was the case here, as well. As soon as this man did what Jesus said, His hand was restored.

Matthew 12:14 "Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him."

I believe they were jealous. They had no power in their lives.

Matthew 12:15 "But when Jesus knew [it], he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all;" Matthew 12:16 "And charged them that they should not make him known:"

You see, these people would not accept the Saviour, so He just moved on to others who would. The reason He did not want it told, was so He could work freely.

Matthew 12:17 "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying," Matthew 12:18 "Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles." Matthew 12:19 "He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets." Matthew 12:20 "A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory." Matthew 12:21 "And in his name shall the Gentiles trust."

You see, Jesus will not force Himself on anyone, but when the religious people turned Him down, He turned to the Gentiles.

Matthew 12:22 "Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw." Matthew 12:23 "And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David?"

These people knew Jesus as one of them. They thought He was only flesh and blood. They knew for sure that they could not heal this man. They did not realize whose presence they were in.

Matthew 12:24 "But when the Pharisees heard [it], they said, This [fellow] doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the

devils."

This was really a ridiculous statement. The devil would not cast himself out. He does not want us to be free.

Matthew 12:25 "And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand:" Matthew 12:26 "And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?" Matthew 12:27 "And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast [them] out? therefore they shall be your judges." Matthew 12:28 "But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you."

He was warning them, here, that they were speaking out against God.

Matthew 12:29 "Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house."

I believe this Scripture, above, was telling us how to cast out evil spirits. First bind them, and then cast them out.

Matthew 12:30 "He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad."

You cannot straddle the fence. You are either the friend of Christ, helping win souls to Him, or you are His enemy, driving people away from God. There is no middle road. We cannot go uncommitted.

## Matthew 24 Questions

1. What day was it when Jesus went through the corn field?
2. What did the disciples do? Why
3. What did the Pharisees say about it?
4. The Pharisees are caught up in what?
5. What did David do when he was hungry?
6. What does the word David mean?
7. God is not out to get us, who is He?
8. On the sabbath, the priest do what?
9. What is Jesus trying to get them to do pertaining to the law?
10. In V-6, Jesus is greater than what?
11. Finish this statement. For the son of man is Lord \_\_\_\_\_.
12. When Jesus left these men, where did He go?
13. What did Jesus, restore in the synagogue?
14. Why did they ask Jesus if it was lawful to heal on the sabbath?
15. What animal did Jesus use to give them an example of why He healed on the sabbath?
16. Jesus is our \_\_\_\_\_.
17. What brings restoration?
18. The author's assumption of what was wrong with them was they were what?
19. After the incident, when Jesus healed them all, He said what?
20. Why?
21. When they would not accept Him, What did He do?
22. Who prophesied about this ahead of time?
23. Jesus was tired of the stiff-necked church and turned to whom?
24. The people were amazed when Jesus healed the dumb man, why?
25. What was the Pharisees' statement about healing the dumb?
26. What did Jesus say to them to make them realize how ridiculous their statement was?
27. If this was the Spirit of God, what had happened?
28. What we do first, before we cast out the demon?
29. If you are not for Jesus, you are \_\_\_\_\_,
30. You are either the friend of Jesus are you are His \_\_\_\_\_.

We will begin in Matthew 12:31 "Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy [against] the [Holy] Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men."

This is, probably, the most misunderstood Scripture in the Bible. My own dad felt he had committed this sin. Billy Graham said, on one of his broadcasts, that his dad felt he had committed this sin. Just the fact that a person is concerned about it, proves he has never committed the unpardonable sin. The word translated means evil speaking. Then it goes on to say speaking evil of the Holy Ghost cannot be forgiven. My interpretation of the Scripture is as long as you are alive, you can get forgiveness for sin of any kind. However, if you die rejecting the salvation offered, there is no forgiveness for that. People are too concerned about this. God wants our faith that everything is ok, not doubt.

Matthew 12:32 "And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the [world] to come."

I think to really understand this, we would have to know and understand who the Holy Ghost is. Jesus said He would send a comforter (Holy Ghost) to come and dwell with us. The Holy Ghost teaches us, directs us, and comforts us. To deny the Holy Ghost would be to deny our salvation. We are saved by faith, not doubt. To speak against the Holy Ghost in this manner spoken of here, We would have to be unsaved. Thus lost! No Christian is guilty of that sin.

Matthew 12:33 "Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by [his] fruit."

This Scripture said we can say we are Christians all day long, but until we are living like Christians, We really are not Christians. Either be good or bad. Do not try to live in both worlds. God wants you on one side, or the other. If you are a Christian, let your good works tell it for you.

Matthew 12:34 "O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh." Matthew 12:35 "A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things."

Jesus was saying, you evil ones, you are so evil no good things can come from within you. People either have good hearts (given to Jesus), or evil hearts (Satan's). You cannot have both at once. The Scriptures said sweet and bitter water cannot come from the same well. {James 3:11} You see, what ever is deep down inside of us is what will come out of our mouths when we open it.

Matthew 12:36 "But I say unto you, That every idle word that men



shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment." Matthew 12:37 "For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned."

This Scripture is best explained with another Scripture: Romans 10:9-10. Romans 10:9 "That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved." Romans 10:10 "For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation." You see, salvation is in the power of confession.

Matthew 12:38 "Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee."

These scribes and Pharisees were like so many people of our day who say "Lord, just show me Noah's Ark with my own two eyes, and then I will believe it existed". Fact is not faith. If you can see it with your own eyes, it takes no faith to believe. This was almost ridiculous for them to call Him Master. A person does what his Master says without having everything explained. This was not the case here.

Matthew 12:39 "But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas:"

Jesus reprimanded them for always wanting a sign. Jesus wants our faith. He called those who continuously had to have a sign an evil and adulterous generation. This adultery, here, is spiritual rather than physical. The sign Jesus was speaking of, here, was Jonah being in the belly of the whale three days and nights. Jesus would be in the belly of the earth 3 days and nights.

Matthew 12:40 "For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth." Matthew 12:41 "The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas [is] here."

Jonah, (Jonas), was a reluctant preacher. He did not think the people of Nineveh were worth saving, but after being swallowed by the whale, he obeyed God and warned Nineveh. The people fasted in sackcloth and ashes, and God spared them. Jonah was just a servant of God. Jesus was God's only begotten Son. They should all have repented and been saved at the greater witness (Jesus). The people just did not listen.

Matthew 12:42 "The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon [is] here."

The wisdom of Solomon was a gift from God. Jesus possesses all wisdom. The Queen of Sheba came to Solomon who had less wisdom than Jesus, and yet no one recognized the vast wisdom of Jesus. In fact, only a hand full of His followers were there when He was crucified.

Matthew 12:43 "When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none." Matthew 12:44 "Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth [it] empty, swept, and garnished."

When a person is delivered from a demonic spirit, the very first thing to do is to fill the vacancy with the Holy Spirit of God. The person delivered must immediately start reading the Bible and getting filled with the Words of the Bible. If the vacancy, where the evil spirit comes out of, is not immediately filled with the good Spirit, the evil will come back and bring more evil spirits with him. Another very important thing to do is make sure all the evil spirits have left before you release the possessed person. There is one called the keeper of the door, and that evil spirit lets others in. Many times it is the first evil spirit a person picks up, such as jealousy. Many demons run in groups like jealousy, hate, murder, suicide, and all associated evil. This is really a special field and should be done by an expert in this field. These spirits, when they are cast out, want a body to dwell in. You should not have unbelievers watching someone being delivered, because this disembodied evil spirit will go into the nonbeliever. These evil spirits like to stay in a family, and will try to go into members of the same family they came out of. Be sure and tell them a specific place to go when they are cast out. This is dangerous business, if you do not know what you are doing. Very few people know how to deliver. Verse 45 explains it very well.

Matthew 12:45 "Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last [state] of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation."

You can see if a person does not know what they are doing in this field, it is best not to attempt it.

Matthew 12:46 "While he yet talked to the people, behold, [his] mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him." Matthew 12:47 "Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee." Matthew 12:48 "But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?" Matthew 12:49 "And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!" Matthew 12:50 "For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother."

All of this was said and done to make us know there is a physical family, and there is a spiritual family. The family that God counts as a family is the relationship of brothers and sisters in the Lord Jesus Christ. There is a physical Israel and a spiritual Israel.

For the next lesson, study chapter 13 of Matthew.

## Matthew 25 Questions

1. Will blasphemy be forgiven men? Explain.
2. Which is the most misunderstood Scripture in the Bible?
3. If a person is concerned about having committed the unforgivable sin, what does that tell us?
4. What is there really no forgiveness for?
5. To deny the Holy Ghost would be to deny what?
6. What are three things the Holy Ghost does for us?
7. A tree is known for what?
8. If you are a Christian, what should tell it for you?
9. Out of the \_\_\_\_\_ of the \_\_\_\_\_ the mouth speaketh.
10. What will come out of our mouths when we open them?
11. What justifies us, or condemns us?
12. What did the scribes and Pharisees ask for?
13. What did they call Jesus?
14. Salvation is in the power of \_\_\_\_\_.
15. Fact is not \_\_\_\_\_.
16. Who seeks after a sign?
17. What kind of adultery is meant by this?
18. What is the only sign they would get?
19. What did Jonah change his mind about bringing the message to Nineveh?
20. Why did this queen come to see Solomon?
21. The gift was given Solomon by whom?
22. This unclean spirit, mentioned in V-43, was doing what?
23. What is the first thing to do after a deliverance?
24. If the person delivered does not stay clean, and pure, and full of the Word of God, what will happen?
25. Why should a nonbeliever not be present at a deliverance?
26. Who should lead a deliverance?
27. Where do these disembodied spirits like to stay?
28. How many more spirits will he bring back, if the one delivered allows him to return?
29. What would be the last state of that person?
30. Who came to see Jesus?
31. What did Jesus say about these relations?
32. What 2 things should we learn from this?
33. What are 2 types of Israel?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 13:1 "The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side." Matthew 13:2 "And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore."

He had, probably, been resting in Peter's home, which was right on the shore of the Sea of Galilee. This multitude of people had, probably, been waiting for Jesus to appear again out of the house. He was so pressed by the large number, that He cast out a little way from the shore. His voice would carry well across the water, as well.

Matthew 13:3 "And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow;" Matthew 13:4 "And when he sowed, some [seeds] fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up:"

In this chapter, we will see seven parables; and we will see why Jesus spoke in parables. Parables are stories that have a deep hidden spiritual message. In this particular message, He was speaking about simple farming methods, so the educated would not discern what He was saying. Jesus came to the common people. They would understand about sowing seeds. The explanation that Jesus gave was so excellent, that I won't go into much detail about the meaning here.

Matthew 13:5 "Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:" Matthew 13:6 "And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away." Matthew 13:7 "And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them:" Matthew 13:8 "But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold."

Jesus was describing the different types of people who hear the message of God and the effect it has on them. As He explained it in a few verses below, look at our church goers today, and you will be able to recognize every one you know. The amazing thing, to me, about the Bible is that it never goes out of date. It is just as current now, as was thousands of years ago. The message is the same, because God never changes.

Matthew 13:9 "Who hath ears to hear, let him hear."

This is an unusual statement, because we all have our two ears hanging on the sides of our head. In some cases, that is the only use (to decorate the head). You see, even though we hear with our physical ears, it does not mean that we receive the message in our inner being. Jesus was saying, listen with your understanding and receive this message in your hearts. Those of you who are capable (Christians) receive the message that the world cannot understand. In other words, He was going to tell us a secret that would help us understand Him better.

Matthew 13:10 "And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why

speakest thou unto them in parables?"

The disciples did not at first understand why Jesus did not just say exactly what He meant. Jesus did not want these unbelievers accepting the message with their minds. Jesus wants us to accept by faith (not earthly knowledge) the things of God. This is the very reason that Noah's Ark has not been found and photographed for the whole world to see. God does not want our heads to believe; He wants our hearts.

Matthew 13:11 "He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given."

Jesus revealed to the people He wanted to know the mysteries. I have discovered that we never fully understand the mysteries of God. Every time I pick up the Bible and read a Scripture that I have read a hundred times before, God will reveal something brand new to me. The more we search the Scriptures, the more we understand, it seems. Some unsaved person can read the Bible over and over and still not understand. The Bible is a spiritual book, and can only be understood through the spirit.

Matthew 13:12 "For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath."

To me, this Scripture above, is just saying, again, that if we have the Spirit of God within us, our understanding will grow and grow. On the other hand, if we reject the teacher (Holy Spirit), we won't even be able to retain what we read with our physical eyes.

Matthew 13:13 "Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand."

Again here, Jesus was just explaining that a saved and unsaved person can look at the same thing and get two totally different messages. The unsaved's understanding has been darkened, so that they do not understand.

Matthew 13:14 "And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive:"

God is the same God in the Old Testament as He is in the New Testament. Isaiah was just saying the same thing, again.

Matthew 13:15 "For this people's heart is waxed gross, and [their] ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with [their] eyes and hear with [their] ears, and should understand with [their] heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them."

You see, above that these people had, on their own volition, closed their eyes and ears to the truth. They had to take the scales

off their eyes and the stoppers out of their ears that they might see, hear, and understand. It all comes about at conversion to Christ.

Matthew 13:16 "But blessed [are] your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear."

It is a blessing from God to be able to see, hear, and understand the Scriptures. The Holy Spirit must be our teacher and our guide. This is a free gift from God; to the blessed of God.

Matthew 13:17 "For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous [men] have desired to see [those things] which ye see, and have not seen [them]; and to hear [those things] which ye hear, and have not heard [them]."

You see, in the Old Testament there was a shadow covering the truth. The way to the Holy place was not open to them. The temple's curtain had not been torn. They understood only in part. They knew God only through the priest in the temple. The great High Priest of all eternity had not come to them yet.

Matthew 13:18 "Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower."

Jesus was going to show them how to understand this parable.

Matthew 13:19 "When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth [it] not, then cometh the wicked [one], and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side."

You see, Jesus was saying when you receive the Lord, the old devil will quickly try to tell you that you didn't get anything. The devil will, also, bring numerous temptations to lure you away from Jesus. Your troubles begin when you receive the Lord. The devil does not want you to be able to stay with your new found faith. This particular parable indicates someone who was too shallow to keep the faith.

Matthew 13:20 "But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it;"  
Matthew 13:21 "Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended."

You see, some people who receive the Lord are on fire for God, then troubles come along, and they lose their faith. Unlike Job, who stood against all the problems Satan could throw his way, these fell at the first great problem that came, and went back into worldly living.

Matthew 13:22 "He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful."

I believe this parables has to do with ministers who play favorites to those who are able to give large amounts to their ministry. They preach to itching ears, so as not to offend the

wealthy in the congregation. They preach what the people want to hear, instead of bringing the message God wants them to bring. Pretty soon they become ineffective, and their message causes no one to repent and be saved. So they are unfruitful.

Matthew 13:23 "But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth [it]; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty."

This last verse is about the person who receives everything the Lord offers, and then goes out to try to win everyone they come into contact with. One of the main reasons there is a differences between the number saved, is because of the size of the congregation ministered to. The message is good in all three cases, because people are saved. Some just minister to smaller crowds. This last one is the one we all want to be. We must reap the harvest before it is too late.

We will continue with verse 24 in the next lesson.

## Matthew 26 Questions

1. In the first two verses, Jesus preached from where? Why?
2. How did Jesus speak to them?
3. Why?
4. How many parables are in chapter 13?
5. What is a parable?
6. What kind of people did Jesus come to?
7. Why did they spring up quickly?
8. How can you recognize who our church goers of today are?
9. Why is our Bible still current today?
10. In V-9, what is unusual?
11. What is Jesus sharing with us in the parables?
12. Jesus did not want them to understand with their \_\_\_\_\_?
13. What does Jesus want?
14. Can we ever fully understand?
15. How is the only way we can understand?
16. If we reject the Holy Ghost as a teacher, what will happen?
17. What is different about the saved and unsaved when studying a Scripture?
18. Who, in the Old Testament, prophesied about this?
19. What kind of eyes and ears are blessed?
20. Why had the Old Testament people not understood?
21. Who steals the truth from the new converts?
22. Are all your problems suddenly gone when you receive the Lord?
23. What is indicted by the stony places?
24. Who was the Old Testament character who withstood temptations and troubles of all kinds?
25. Who do the thorns represent?
26. What kind of sermons do they bring?
27. Verse 23, describes whom?
28. Why is there 30, 60, 100?



We will pickup in this lesson with Matthew 13:24 "Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:"

This is the second parable in Matthew 13. Here, is a farmer going out to plant. Of course he plants good seed, or else it would be a waste of time to plant. We know that we reap what we sow, If we want corn out of the field, we do not plant peas. The kingdom of heaven is built with the seed of the Word being planted and growing.

Matthew 13:25 "But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way."

This sentence is so sad. The wheat are the Christians; and this means that right in the midst of even the church, the enemy sneaks in and plants evil right beside the good. Probably, unaware to the owner of the land (pastor). You see, the farmer (God) would never plant tares. This was an act of the old devil himself.

Matthew 13:26 "But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also."

You see, the Christians bring forth fruit in the midst of evil in the world. We are not excused, just because we are surrounded by evil.

Matthew 13:27 "So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?"

To me, this is a perfect description of what the true believers in Christ are asking about what is going on in the church today. Of course, there are other meanings, as well.

Matthew 13:28 "He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?"

You see, there was recognition right off that the devil had been to the field and sown these evil ones. Sometimes the person sitting on the pew beside you in church is not really a believer, but has been placed there by the devil to disrupt what is going on. These believers, here, are asking the Lord, should we throw them out of the church?

Matthew 13:29 "But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them."

All through the Bible, the wheat stands for the true believers in the Lord Jesus Christ. You know in a church, if you begin to throw the enemy out, some of the true believers will be hurt and leave. It is just best to leave them alone and feed them the unwatered down truth; and they will either repent and be saved, or they will leave on their own; because they cannot stand the truth.

Matthew 13:30 "Let both grow together until the harvest: and in

the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn."

If there is a point to be made about staying here on the earth for the entire seven years of tribulation and the wrath of God, it would be this Scripture here. You see, good and evil are here together until the harvest. If you will carefully notice what it said to do, it indicated that the unbelievers will be bound and wait to be burned. The Christians will be gathered and taken to the Master's barn {heaven}. You see, this Scripture occurs at the end of the Gentile age when God decides that it is time to reap the harvest of the Christians from the earth. Truly anyone left here will be bound by the devil, and will eventually wind up in a burning hell. These reapers are the angels God sends to get the job done for Him. Angels are ministering spirits directly under the command of God. We will read more about this later in this lesson.

Matthew 13:31 "Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field:" Matthew 13:32 "Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof."

Have you ever seen an, "on-fire-for-God Christian", who was as small as a grain of mustard seed? When he gets saved, he cannot be quiet. The first thing you know, he has led hundreds to God. You see, we are all grafted in the tree of life (Jesus) when we get saved. Just one true believer can add mightily to that tree. He is the vine, we are the branches. We do provide shelter for the lost of the world.

Matthew 13:33 "Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened."

Here, again, this was speaking of one Christian who was placed with a bunch of nonbelievers. In this incident, I believe the Christian did not witness with words, but by the exemplary life he, or she lived in front of them. The nonbeliever was won to the Lord by wanting what the Christian had.

Matthew 13:34 "All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them:" Matthew 13:35 "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world."

You see, again, that Jesus spoke in parables so the worldly people could not understand with their minds, and come to God not with their hearts, but with their minds. These secrets, that Jesus was revealing, were things of the dispensation of grace, not the law.

Matthew 13:36 "Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field."

You see, at this time the disciples had not received the Spirit (teacher), and they did not understand; because parables must be understood by the Spirit. I personally believe it is necessary to be baptized in the Holy Spirit of God, before we can truly understand.

Matthew 13:37 "He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man;" Matthew 13:38 "The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked [one];"

You see, Jesus is the Word. Believers in the Lord Jesus have to grow in the midst of evil. We must be tried, or else the Lord would not truly know if we belong to Him. You see, Satan's crowd is all around us.

Matthew 13:39 "The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels."

You see, the devil is headed for a burning hell, and he would like to see all of us go there with him. He brings every temptation known to man to cause us to stumble and fall. Sometimes, we are unaware who the enemy is. I tell the children in school, here, that the devil is not easily recognized. Sometimes he lives in a physically beautiful girl, or a handsome young man. We are nearing harvest time; the time when the trumpet will blow and the Christians will be carried away to God's barn (heaven). Angels are ministering spirits. We, Christians, have been called to bring in the harvest.

Matthew 13:40 "As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world." Matthew 13:41 "The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity;" Matthew 13:42 "And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth."

This will be a time of trouble such as the world has never known before. Just to know that we would be forever separated from Jesus would be bad enough, but to burn forever would be horrible. Jesus is the Judge. He decided which way we go. Truly though, it is our decision to follow Him in truth, or not.

Matthew 13:43 "Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear."

You see, it is beyond description what is waiting for the true believer, who stays faithful to the end. It will be one eternal day with the Father, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit. We will shine, because we will be in the presence of the Light (Jesus). Here, Jesus just said one more time; don't turn away from God. Let that still quiet voice bring you to the Lord.

In the next lesson, we will pick up in verse 44.

## Matthew 27 Questions

1. What is the Kingdom of heaven likened unto?
2. What is the kingdom of heaven built for?
3. When the men slept, who planted?
4. Who does the wheat represent?
5. Who do the tares represent?
6. What did the servants ask the householder?
7. Are we to throw them out of the church?
8. Why?
9. What two things will happen to unbelievers, if you leave them alone?
10. What Scripture gives some precedence to the theory of staying on the earth all seven years of tribulation?
11. Where is the Masters barn?
12. Who are the reapers?
13. Who are ministering spirits?
14. What did the grain of mustard seed grow to be?
15. Who is the Tree of Life?
16. What did the woman hide in the measure of meal?
17. How did Jesus reveal the secrets that had been kept from the foundation of the earth?
18. Why did the disciples not understand the parables?
19. Why sowed the good seed?
20. Who are the good seed?
21. Who are the tares?
22. What is the harvest?
23. Where will the evil wind up?
24. Who is the Judge?
25. Why will the righteous shine?

We begin this lesson in Matthew 13:44 "Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field."

This Scripture above, is telling us that we must be willing to give up the things of the world. Nothing is more valuable than the things of God. Whatever price we have to pay is not too much to follow Jesus.

Matthew 13:45 "Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls:" Matthew 13:46 "Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it."

Here, again, this Scripture is saying that the greatest value in the world is Jesus. The pearl of great price, here, is the most valuable item. It just means salvation through Jesus Christ.

Matthew 13:47 "Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind:" Matthew 13:48 "Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away."

This is very interesting. Salvation is offered to everyone. The "sea", here, means masses of people. You see, Jesus has thrown the net for everyone. He died for all, but not every one receives salvation. At a special time, everyone will die to this world and stand before Jesus. The Christians will be the keepers in this fish net. Those cast away (those who do not believe in the Lord Jesus) will be condemned to hell.

Matthew 13:49 "So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just," Matthew 13:50 "And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth."

This is just a more detailed description of the separation of the followers of Jesus and the followers of Satan. Those who reject Jesus as Saviour will burn forever in hell.

Matthew 13:51 "Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord."

The "them", here, means the disciples. After Jesus explained to them how to interpret these parables, it was easy for them to see.

Matthew 13:52 "Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe [which is] instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man [that is] an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure [things] new and old."

I believe this, probably, has to do with old and new information,

which is knowledge we have learned through the Spirit of God. Some things we know and have known for quite awhile. Some things we learn new every day. We must write these things, so others may share in them.

Matthew 13:53 "And it came to pass, [that] when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence."

These parables and their meaning were for the disciples' instruction.

Matthew 13:54 "And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this [man] this wisdom, and [these] mighty works?"

Notice, this said in "their" synagogue. They recognized Jesus as a great teacher and even recognized Him for His great miracles, but they really had no idea who He was. They called Him a man. They really thought anyone not taught in their schools could not possibly know anything worthwhile.

Matthew 13:55 "Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?" Matthew 13:56 "And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this [man] all these things?"

We will hear the Lord Jesus say later that a prophet is not without honor, but in his own home town. They knew Jesus in the flesh, not in the Spirit. They could not believe that He was anyone special, because they knew His earthly family. Had they known the Scriptures as well as they thought they did, they would have recognized Him as God's only begotten Son.

Matthew 13:57 "And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honor, save in his own country, and in his own house."

Isn't this the way even with people who are called to the ministry today? Friends and family have a very hard time believing that you have been called of God. We will see the results of unbelief in the next verse. It is really difficult to minister to people who do not believe that you are called of God.

Matthew 13:58 "And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief."

So many times when Jesus healed someone, He would say, your faith has made you whole. Faith has everything to do with healing, and even with salvation. Without faith, it is impossible to please God.

Read chapter 14 of Matthew for the next lesson.

## Matthew 28 Questions

1. What is compared to a treasure in a field?
2. What drastic step did he do to buy the field?
3. What does this parable tell us?
4. What did the man do that found the pearl of great price?
5. What does this pearl mean?
6. What is the sea symbolic of?
7. What symbolizes the Christian in this?
8. What will the angels do to the evil, severed from the good?
9. When Jesus asked if the disciples understood, what did they answer?
10. Who was the scribe likened to?
11. What were the parables for?
12. When He went to His own land, where did He teach?
13. What attitude did they have?
14. What recognition did they give Jesus?
15. What did they really think about Jesus?
16. They thought because Jesus was not taught in their schools, He \_\_\_\_\_.
17. Whose son did they think He was?
18. Name four brothers of Jesus?
19. What was wrong with their knowledge of Jesus?
20. What statement did Jesus make about a prophet?
21. Who are the people who are hardest to convince that you are called to the ministry?
22. Why did Jesus not do many mighty works there?
23. When Jesus healed, what did they say?

We will begin this lesson with Matthew 14:1 "At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus," Matthew 14:2 "And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him."

The fame of Jesus had spread throughout the land. This Herod had beheaded John, and was feeling guilty. He was fearful of John when John was living, and now, he had worked himself up to believe that this Jesus was John risen from the grave.

Matthew 14:3 "For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put [him] in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife." Matthew 14:4 "For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her."

Herod had married his brother's wife, John had confronted him and told them that they were living in sin. Herod put him in jail to keep him quiet.

Matthew 14:5 "And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet."

Herod and Herodias would have liked to be rid of John, but they were afraid of the followers of John, because there were so many of them.

Matthew 14:6 "But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod." Matthew 14:7 "Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she would ask." Matthew 14:8 "And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptist's head in a charger." Matthew 14:9 "And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded [it] to be given [her]." Matthew 14:10 "And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison." Matthew 14:11 "And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought [it] to her mother."

You can easily see why we should not take oaths. This evil Herodias caught Herod at a weak moment and plotted this evil scheme. The sin was the mother's. The daughter was just carrying out her mother's wishes. Herod really did not want to kill John, but to save face with his friends, he carried out this horrid deed. John was a martyr. John's trouble was over. Herod's trouble was just beginning.

Matthew 14:12 "And his disciples came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus."

These were John's disciples (followers) who got his body and buried it. Their first thought was to warn Jesus.

Matthew 14:13 "When Jesus heard [of it], he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard [thereof], they followed him on foot out of the cities."



Jesus withdrew from the city to be alone for awhile. It was not time for Jesus to confront Herod here. The large groups of people who followed Jesus for the healings and miracles would not be discouraged, just because He had left town. They just walked out to the desert where He was. They wanted to be healed and to see His mighty miracles.

Matthew 14:14 "And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick."

This multitude had needs in their lives. Jesus is always concerned about our needs. He is always ready to heal. This time was no different. He realized they had great belief, or they would not have come so far. Faith brings answers to prayers. Jesus healed them.

Matthew 14:15 "And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals."

The disciples were telling Jesus that supper time had passed, and that these people needed to leave to go find food. They, probably, were ready for the ministry for that day to stop as well, because it was getting late.

Matthew 14:16 " But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart; give ye them to eat." Matthew 14:17 "And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes."

Jesus knew that He was the Bread of Life. The disciples could see only the physical food. The number "five" means grace. The disciples could not understand how Jesus could believe these five loaves and two fishes could feed so many.

Matthew 14:18 "He said, Bring them hither to me." Matthew 14:19 "And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to [his] disciples, and the disciples to the multitude." Matthew 14:20 "And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full." Matthew 14:21 "And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children."

This is one of the most interesting miracles in the Bible. Several things we need to note here. The disciples did not believe at first that there was enough food. Jesus is the Bread of Life. He fed the three million Israelites on their way to the promised land, this was minor to that. We, also, must see the importance of prayer before meals. We, also, must realize that on command Jesus could cause a super abundance of anything to be there. God owns everything, and it is all subject to His command. It is, also, interesting that after feeding 10 to 20 thousand people, there was still a basket of food left for each disciple. Jesus created the universe. This miracle of food was minor to that. Jesus has no limits to what He could do then or now. We limit God. God is not limited. As we see in the next verse. Jesus did not stop and dwell on this miracle, He quickly went on to

other things.

Matthew 14:22 "And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away." Matthew 14:23 "And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone."

Jesus needed time away from the group. He sent the multitude home and went aside to commune with the Father. We should learn from this the importance of time alone with God in prayer. The most effective prayers are when we are hidden away with God.

Matthew 14:24 "But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary."

The Sea of Galilee is well known for its high winds and shipwrecks. This was no different. The wind was up.

Matthew 14:25 "And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea." Matthew 14:26 "And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear."

It would be a fearful sight in the dark of night to see a man walking on the sea. They really didn't realize who Jesus was, or they would not have been astonished at this feat.

Matthew 14:27 "But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid."

Jesus recognized their fear and spoke to them to calm them down.

Matthew 14:28 "And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water." Matthew 14:29 "And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus."

You can see from these Scriptures above, that faith in Jesus makes supernatural things possible. The secret of success is to obey the Lord's voice, and then keep our eyes upon Him.

Matthew 14:30 "But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me." Matthew 14:31 "And immediately Jesus stretched forth [his] hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?"

You see, Peter was doing fine, until he took his eyes off Jesus, and on to the things of the world. Fear is not of God. It is lack of faith. Our cry, the same as Peter's, is Lord save me. There was no hesitation. Jesus is always as near as our cry for help. He is our very present help. He reminded Peter that his doubt was what caused him to sink.

Matthew 14:32 "And when they were come into the ship, the wind

ceased." Matthew 14:33 "Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God."

Where Jesus is, there is always peace. This walking on the water did this for the disciples. They suddenly realized who Jesus was. It seems as if they should have known it before, when He fed 5,000 men.

Matthew 14:34 "And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret."

Gennesaret was a small region of Galilee on the west shore of the lake.

Matthew 14:35 "And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased;" Matthew 14:36 "And besought him that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole."

You see, this was away from the home area of Jesus. The disciples had just seen such a miracle that caused them to worship Jesus. His fame had spread, and people brought all their friends and relatives who were sick. Their faith was so strong that they thought if they could touch anything of His, it would heal them. The great miracles, here, happened because of their great faith.

Study Matthew 15 for the next lesson.

## Matthew 29 Questions

1. What did Herod think when he heard of the fame of Jesus?
2. Why did Herod put John in jail?
3. What sin had John told Herod he committed?
4. Why had Herod not put John to death?
5. What was the celebrated occasion when Herodias' daughter danced?
6. Who told her to ask for John's head?
7. Why did Herod go through with this hideous crime?
8. What did this make John?
9. Whose disciples came out and got the body?
10. What did they do immediately after burying John?
11. When Jesus heard, what did He do?
12. What happened to the multitude seeking Jesus' help?
13. When Jesus realized they had followed, what did he do?
14. What brings answers to prayers?
15. In verse 16, what did Jesus tell the disciples that seemed impossible.
16. How many loaves and fishes did they have?
17. What does five mean?
18. What two things did Jesus do before serving the food?
19. How many fragments were left?
20. How many were fed?
21. Who is Jesus?
22. Who stayed to send the multitude away?
23. What did Jesus do when He was alone?
24. What are the most effective prayers?
25. What was well known for high winds?
26. What time of night did Jesus go to them?
27. What was unusual about His coming?
28. What effect did it have on the disciples?
29. Who asked to meet Jesus?
30. Could he do this miracle? How long?
31. What makes supernatural things possible?
32. What did Peter cry out?
33. What is fear?
34. What land did they go to?
35. What did the men do when they heard Jesus had come to them?
36. The great miracles happened because of what?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 15:1 "Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying," Matthew 15:2 "Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread."

These Pharisees were so caught up in formalism, that they could not understand anything but tradition. You see, this was not really what God had meant, but was rather part of the Pharisees' tradition.

Matthew 15:3 "But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?" Matthew 15:4 "For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death." Matthew 15:5 "But ye say, Whosoever shall say to [his] father or [his] mother, [It is] a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me;" Matthew 15:6 "And honour not his father or his mother, [he shall be free]. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition."

You see, these Pharisees, who were so caught up in every little detail of the law, only kept it at their convenience. If there was something difficult for them to do, like honoring parents, they just twisted it around to suit their own wants. It is like preachers that say something is a sin in your life, but cannot recognize the very same thing as sin in their own lives. They, like the Pharisees, have a belief of convenience.

Matthew 15:7 "[Ye] hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying," Matthew 15:8 "This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with [their] lips; but their heart is far from me."

You see, again here, God does not want us to be like a robot going through all the formalism. He does not want us to talk a good belief in Him, but to truly believe way down deep in our hearts. As I have said so many times before, we must be in love with Jesus, not just obeying Him systematically. He wants our hearts to be stayed on Him.

Matthew 15:9 "But in vain they do worship me, teaching [for] doctrines the commandments of men."

Can you see, here, that most doctrines of churches are produced out of the minds of men? God is displeased with our doctrines that separate His people. He will not accept this type of worship. Jesus wants our love.

Matthew 15:10 "And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand:"

He was saying here, do not just listen with your physical ear, but with your spiritual ear, and let this become part of your knowing.

Matthew 15:11 "Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man."

You see, when you eat with unwashed hands, you harm no one but yourself. All of this will be carried out as waste from the body. When we speak evil things out of our mouths which originate in the heart, we sometimes hurt someone else so badly, that the damage is permanent. Our witness becomes totally ineffective when those around us see how bad our hearts are. Bitter and sweet water cannot come from the same well (James 3:11). What ever is in your heart, will come out.

Matthew 15:12 "Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying?"

These Pharisees were so self righteous, that they were beyond receiving instruction. When a person gets that far along, he or she is in bad shape. The Pharisees were like many in the churches today. They were full of formalism, without any power or closeness to God. II Timothy 3:5 "Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away."

Matthew 15:13 "But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up." Matthew 15:14 "Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch."

This is a sad statement about the condition of some of our churches today. The preacher has watered down the truth of God to such an extent, that people who attend his church are following right down the road with the preacher, and they both fall. A spiritual blind person cannot lead you into a spiritual relationship with Jesus. These plants are not sold out to God, rooted and grounded in the Word. The Word is the rich soil; we must work to get a good crop.

Matthew 15:15 "Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable."

Remember at this time, Peter and the other disciples had not received the Holy Spirit. Jesus was still having to explain the parables to them. Their understanding had not been opening.

Matthew 15:16 "And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?" Matthew 15:17 "Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?" Matthew 15:18 "But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man." Matthew 15:19 "For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies:" Matthew 15:20 "These are [the things] which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man."

You see these Pharisees looked on the outward appearance to judge. Jesus looks on the heart of the inner man.

Matthew 15:21 "Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon." Matthew 15:22 "And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have

mercy on me, O Lord, [thou] son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil." Matthew 15:23 "But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us."

This woman, by the Israelite law, was unclean, and an Israelite was not even to speak to a Canaanite. This woman was desperate. She was to the point of begging. She had heard the fame of Jesus, and knew if there was help anywhere, it had to be through Jesus. She called Him Son of David (saying by this that He was, indeed, an Israelite). She was aware, also, that the separation existed between the Israelites and the Canaanites. As if Jesus needed them to make His decisions for Him, the disciples came to tell Him what to do. Jesus showed compassion, and spoke to her in the next verse.

Matthew 15:24 "But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel."

This Scripture above, did not just mean the Jews, it meant spiritual Israel, as well; because He called them lost sheep. Physical Israel, is seldom ever spoken of as lost sheep.

Matthew 15:25 "Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me."

She humbled herself here, realizing who He was, and even called Him Lord.

Matthew 15:26 "But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast [it] to dogs."

Unbelievers were often called dogs. Jesus, in essence, was saying that the Canaanite people were not followers of God, and that the Bread (Word) would be wasted upon them.

Matthew 15:27 "And she said, Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table."

She was not arguing that her people had a good record of following God. In fact, she admitted that her heritage was not of God. She appealed to Jesus' sympathy. She said, I will wait around and just take the leftover blessings as you feed others. She had great humility and faith.

Matthew 15:28 "Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great [is] thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour."

One thing that really gets results from God is our great faith in Jesus and His ability to perform miracles. Jesus just spoke the Word, and the woman's daughter was made whole. Notice, though, that this woman had to persist in her request. We read in James the fifth chapter that "The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much." You see, God needs to know that we are serious about our prayer requests, and He will answer our prayers. It is okay to pray more than once about something.

We will pick up the next lesson in Matthew 15:29.

Notes



## Matthew 30 Questions

1. These scribes and Pharisees were from what city?
2. What did they accuse the disciples of doing?
3. These Pharisees were caught up in what?
4. How did Jesus answer them?
5. Those who curse father and mother were to do what in the law?
6. How did the Pharisees keep the law?
7. When did the Pharisees keep the law?
8. Compare this with some modern preachers?
9. What did Jesus call them?
10. Isaiah said these people draweth nigh unto me with their \_\_\_\_\_ but their \_\_\_\_\_ is far from me.
11. Jesus wants what to be stayed on Him?
12. In verse nine, what were they teaching?
13. In verse ten, name two things we should do.
14. What defileth a man?
15. What really was the problem of the Pharisees?
16. The description in Second Timothy 3:5 says what?
17. If the blind lead the blind, what happens?
18. What is the rich soil we must work to truly understand?
19. Why did Peter not understand?
20. Words that come out of the mouth originate where?
21. The woman that come to Jesus was from where?
22. What was wrong with her daughter?
23. Why had she come to Jesus?
24. Who was Jesus sent to?
25. What did she call Jesus?
26. What were unbelievers often called?
27. What did she admit to Jesus about her heritage?
28. What two things did she show in herself?
29. Why did Jesus heal her daughter?
30. Are we to pray more than once for the same thing?
31. Quote the portion of Scripture in the 5th chapter of James that tells us this.

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 15:29 "And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there."

Jesus was near the Sea of Galilee quite a bit. Peter's home was on the banks of the sea. Jesus was followed by such a large group of people, that it was easier for them to gather out of town. When Jesus was housed in His physical body, He had to rest. This was what the Scripture above, probably, meant, when it said (sat down). Also, on the side of the mountain would be a good place to minister to the masses who followed Him.

Matthew 15:30 "And great multitudes came unto him, having with them [those that were] lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them:"

In this particular case, multitude was not a graphic enough word to describe the huge number of people who thronged Jesus, so "great" was added to stress how many. They followed Him everywhere He went, wanting to receive a miracle from Him. Look at these diseases carefully. Each one of these diseases can be either physical, or spiritual. You see, it is just as bad to have a spiritual problem of these diseases, as it is a physical. Just use blindness as an example. Are we blind to the reality of Jesus in our lives?

You see, to be blind spiritually would mean an eternity away from Jesus. Jesus works on us physically, spiritually, and mentally. He takes care of it all. I like the fact that this Scripture did not say He healed a few of them. He heals everyone who has enough faith to receive healing.

Matthew 15:31 "Insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel."

Just as it is hard for people today to believe in miracles until they see one, it was amazing to these people, as well. I am amazed myself when I stand before a church and preach. I was so shy in my church for so many years. I even sat on the back row to keep from being called upon to say anything. When Jesus touches your life, you are never the same again. We walk for Him, talk for Him, and are even different in appearance, because of His presence inside of us. Who always should get the glory? The God of Israel.

Matthew 15:32 "Then Jesus called his disciples [unto him], and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way."

Just as these disciples were called to Jesus, so that they might minister to the people, we are called to serve the people, as well. The called of God (disciples) are actually servants. We are called to

minister to the needs of the people. I believe the reason three days was mentioned, here, had to do with fasting. When we are really serious about getting answers from God, that is a goodly amount of time to fast. Jesus said if they fasted more, they would, probably, faint. You see a fast is no food nor drink, other than water. So many people call themselves fasting when they drink juice, but that is not a true fast. A true fast is total abstinence from everything of the world. You see, this three day fast had caused Jesus to have compassion for them. All of these things combined make me believe that this is an appropriate time in God's sight.

Matthew 15:33 "And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?"

The amazing thing, to me, in all of this, is the fact that the disciples did not remember how Jesus fed the 5,000 men with 5 loaves and 2 fishes.

Matthew 15:34 "And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few little fishes."

A few means more than two, so we automatically know they had more fish than the other time, and they had two more loaves than the last time and fewer people. The disciples just quickly forgot.

Matthew 15:35 "And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground." Matthew 15:36 "And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake [them], and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude."

There are several things we must look into here. Of course, there was a miracle provision of food. The Bible says, "yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread." {Psalms 37:25} God will feed us miraculously, if it is necessary, as He did the Israelites with Mannah from heaven. Looking at the spiritual, here, I can see that God should give the message to the minister in the church, and that minister, without altering it in any way, should pass it on to the believers. God's Word is the staff of life. We, ministers, must not feed them food we have prepared, but should feed them what God passes to them through us. The seven just means that the message of God gives will be spiritually complete, we need not add to or take away from it.

Matthew 15:37 "And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken [meat] that was left seven baskets full."

As new Christians we are fed milk and honey, but as we grow in the Lord, He feeds us meat. The meat He fed the multitude was so abundant that the disciples picked up seven extra baskets full. Notice, this is broken meat. We must break the Word given us in the Bible, properly, so that each listener can easily receive. Too large a bite might choke us.

Matthew 15:38 "And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children."

Four, being a word that means universal, indicates that this powerful sustenance is available to the entire world. Jesus is the Tree of Life. His food always takes care of His children. The Scripture above, says that not only can the men receive Jesus, but it is available to women and children, as well.

Matthew 15:39 "And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala."

Jesus sends us away to tell others. We cannot just sit around the table always and never go out. Jesus had others to bring into His kingdom, and so on to Magdala, the city where Mary Magdalene lived.

For the next lesson, study chapter 16 of Matthew.

Notes

## Matthew 31 Questions

1. What Sea did Jesus go to to minister?
2. Why did He go to the mountain?
3. Why had He left the city?
4. What did the Scripture indicate when it said Jesus sat down?
5. What disciple had a home near the Sea?
6. Name four types of people the multitude brought.
7. Why did they follow Jesus?
8. What two ways should we look at the diseases?
9. What three ways does Jesus work on us?
10. Who did the multitude glorify?
11. What makes us look different, if we have Jesus?
12. How long had the multitude fasted?
13. Why didn't Jesus just let them go and eat in town?
14. The called of God, or disciples, are what?
15. What is a fast? (two things)
16. How many loaves did they have?
17. What do we automatically know was different here?
18. There was a miracle provision of what?
19. What is the spiritual message here to pastors?
20. What is the staff of life?
21. What does the seven mean?
22. A new Christian receives milk and honey, but as he grows, what is he fed?
23. Why must it be broken?
24. What does four mean?
25. Can only the men receive? Explain.
26. What was the name of the town where Mary Magdalene lived?

Chapter 16 of Matthew is where we will begin this lesson.

Matthew 16:1 "The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven."

These Pharisees and Sadducees were always trying to trap Jesus. They would not have believed, regardless of how great the sign from heaven.

Matthew 16:2 "He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, [It will be] fair weather: for the sky is red." Matthew 16:3 "And in the morning, [It will be] foul weather to day: for the sky is red and lowring. O [ye] hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not [discern] the signs of the times?"

Jesus was saying to them, signs that you can see with your eyes, you understand; but the spiritual meaning of the Scriptures in your Bible, you do not understand. Throughout the Old Testament, God warned of the signs of the times. At least 37 times in the Old Testament, there was prophecy about the coming of Jesus, and these learned men of the Old Testament did not even realize that the fulfillment was standing before them. These Pharisees and Sadducees could even predict the weather by the physical signs in the sky; but had no spiritual discernment at all.

Matthew 16:4 "A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed."

Jesus upbraided them for not understanding their own Scriptures better. Abraham, their physical forefather, accepted on faith. This was not good enough for them, they had to see the act with their very own eyes. Followers of Jesus must accept on faith. Wicked people refuse to believe. Jesus called them wicked and adulterous. Wicked because of unbelief; adulterous, because they spiritually rejected Him (spiritual adultery). The sign spoken of, that would be given, was Jesus' body lying three days in the earth and rising again, as Jonah spent three days in the whale's belly and was returned to the earth. He knew that they would not receive or understand the message, so He (as He has commanded us to do when they will not believe) left them and went somewhere where they would receive the message.

Matthew 16:5 "And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread." Matthew 16:6 "Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees."

These disciples were thinking of their physical needs. Jesus was warning them about the sin (leaven) of the Pharisees and Sadducees. Jesus was warning His disciples of the false doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees. If you will, their spiritual blindness.

Matthew 16:7 "And they reasoned among themselves, saying, [It is]

because we have taken no bread."

Usually, when our mind or reasoning gets involved, we leave the spiritual far behind.

Matthew 16:8 "[Which] when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread?" Matthew 16:9 "Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?" Matthew 16:10 "Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?"

Jesus was saying, have you forgotten so quickly about the miracle of the feeding of the multitude? Jesus could not believe that they still doubted for their physical food, when so great a miracle was performed twice. Don't you know they felt ashamed when they were reminded?

Matthew 16:11 "How is it that ye do not understand that I spake [it] not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?"

Jesus was saying to them. Look beyond the physical to the spiritual. Jesus is the Bread of Life. They need not fear hunger. He is our very present help. Jesus was telling them that sin prevailed in the Pharisees and Sadducees, because of lack of faith. Without faith, it is impossible to please God.

Matthew 16:12 "Then understood they how that he bade [them] not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees." Matthew 16:13 "When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?"

This Caesarea Philippi was not the same as the Caesarea by the Mediterranean Sea. Jesus asked the disciples an interesting question. Many people, even today, are inquiring, who is this Jesus?

Matthew 16:14 "And they said, Some [say that thou art] John the Baptist: some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets."

You see, the interesting thing about Jesus then, as now, was that He was a mystery; they could not figure Him out. They never denied that He did the miracles, and that He was a great teacher and prophet. We read where Herod believed He was John the Baptist, risen again after Herod beheaded him. In Malachi, there was a promise of Elijah Malachi 4:5 "Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD:" They could not deny His miracles that were so numerous. The Word says if they were written in a book, there would not be enough books in the world to contain them (John 21:25). They just did not believe that He was, is, and always will be the Word of God; who took on the form of flesh and dwelt among us. God manifest in the flesh; God with us. That is where false teaching comes in today. It all has to do with believing that Jesus was the Christ, the Son of the living God; Emmanuel, God with us, if we believe that Jesus was anything less than God the Son, who took on the form of flesh and dwelt among us, we are in error. Only God

could wipe away your sins. No mere man could wipe away your sins. The whole thing comes down to, what do I believe about Jesus?

Any teaching that lowers Jesus to the level of man, or any teaching that raises man to the level of Jesus, is in error. Jesus is the second personality in the Godhead. His body only was man. The Spirit in the body was God. His body died on the cross. His Spirit is eternal. John 1:1 "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." He was with Father God, but He was in fact God; the Son, the Word. The Word became the Son for His stay on earth. Jesus never died. He dismissed His Spirit from His body on the cross and commanded it to go to the Father. He went into hell victorious, and took the keys of hell away from Satan. He preached in hell and brought captivity out with Him. They were seen in Jerusalem after His resurrection, when His Spirit reunited with His changed body. Jesus is, was, and always will be God. He is the second person in the Godhead. Who He is can only be spiritually discerned.

Matthew 16:15 "He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?"

He was saying. I know what the world thinks, but what do you ministers of mine think? Do you really know who I am?

Matthew 16:16 "And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God."

This answer that Peter gave is the proper name of Jesus for His stay here on this earth. He (Peter) was saying, You are the Anointed One, the only Son, the Saviour of the world, The Life Everlasting. Jesus answered Thomas and told him that He (Jesus) is Life. He went so far as to say that no one comes to the Father, except by Him (Jesus). To be saved we must know who He is and believe He is our Salvation. (John 6:65)

Matthew 16:17 "And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed [it] unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven."

You see, fleshly man does not have any idea who Jesus is. The blessed of God (true believers) are the only ones who understand who Jesus really is. Unless God reveals to us in our spirit, we will never truly understand who Jesus really is. This is why it is so important today to understand the person of Jesus. Most false doctrines are very close to the truth. They are misled about the person of Jesus. False doctrines teach that He became God when He rose again, some even teach that He suffered in hell for us. None of these are true. We must carefully weigh teachings with the Word of God. It must line up with Scripture to be true. Beware of teachings that elevate man.

Next lesson will begin in Matthew 16:18.



## Matthew 32 Questions

1. What did the Pharisees and Sadducees ask Jesus to show them?
2. What were they trying to do?
3. Would they believe, if He gave them what they asked?
4. What physical sign meant fair weather?
5. How many times in the Old Testament were they told about Jesus?
6. They could discern the physical, but could not discern what?
7. Who seeketh a sign?
8. What is the only sign that will be given?
9. Their forefather, Abraham, accepted on what?
10. Why did Jesus call them adulterous?
11. What are we told to do when people will not hear?
12. What did Jesus warn the disciples of, pertaining to the Pharisees and Sadducees?
13. What was Jesus really warning them of?
14. Usually when we start to reason with our minds, we leave what behind?
15. What miracles did Jesus bring to their remembrance?
16. Jesus is the \_\_\_\_\_ of \_\_\_\_\_.
17. It is impossible to please God without what?
18. It was not the leaven of bread, but what of the Pharisees Jesus warned them about?
19. How is the only way to understand a hidden message?
20. What question did Jesus ask the disciples at Caesarea Philippi about the people?
21. What do people ask today?
22. What four answers did they give?
23. What things have never been denied about Jesus?

Last lesson we learned that Peter recognized Jesus as the Christ, the Son of the Living God. Jesus informed Peter that the Father had revealed this to him. We pick up this lesson at Matthew 16:18.

Matthew 16:18 "And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it."

In this, Jesus was telling Peter that His church would be built on the foundational rock of truth, which had just issued from Peter's mouth. All the blessed (believers in the Lord Jesus Christ) have this truth from the Father. "Peter" means rock. The gates of hell shall not prevail against the church that is built on the truth.

Matthew 16:19 "And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven."

You see, Jesus has based entrance into heaven on belief in the truth, which is Him. A key opens something, and truly the way to heaven is open to the true believer. God has given these true believers great power through the name of Jesus. This is a spiritual gift from Jesus. The strength of the enemy is almost overwhelming, but we can bind that spirit through the power of Jesus Christ. Jesus actually binds it for us. The same is true of loosing. It is the power of Jesus in us.

Matthew 16:20 "Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ."

It was not time for this to be revealed. Even today, when you speak of Jesus being God manifest in the flesh, it causes people to hate you. Nevertheless, I shall proclaim it to everyone who will hear.

Matthew 16:21 "From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day."

Jesus did not want His own to be unaware of the fate that lay ahead for Him. He was trying to tell them that the learned in the law would have Him killed, believing they were doing God a favor. He, also, gave them hope of the resurrection. They were just not ready for this message. When persecution arises even today, many will flee.

Matthew 16:22 "Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee."

This "rebuke" was not the same as it is usually used. It meant Peter just did not want this to happen to Jesus. He just would not accept it.

Matthew 16:23 "But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men."

He was telling Peter (he was looking at this from the earthly standpoint) he did not understand the purposes of God. This is not a rebuff of the person of Peter, but rather of the spirit of evil which would try to tempt Jesus not to go through with the death of the cross.

Matthew 16:24 "Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any [man] will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me."

Jesus told these disciples and His followers for all ages, if you think it is going to be easy to follow Me, you are wrong. It is a life of self-denial and sacrifice. To follow Jesus, we must die daily to self and pick up whatever burden has been allotted for us to carry without complaining; following in the footsteps of Jesus. Not living our lives for self, but letting Jesus live through us.

Matthew 16:25 "For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it."

You see, to be truly Jesus', we must allow it to be His life and not ours, as we read in Galatians 2:20. "I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me." You see, it is Christ in us living this life.

Matthew 16:26 "For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?"

Life is temporary at the very best. We could possess all the world's goods, and still be lost. In fact, we, probably, would be lost. It reminds me of the rich man in the Bible who decided he had it made and started building new buildings to hold his wealth. Then God required his soul, and he left it all behind. We will stand before Jesus. Then it won't matter how great we were here. Only the treasures we have laid up in heaven will count. You see, it would be no price at all to give all to Jesus, and exchange 70 years here for all the eons of eternity in heaven.

Matthew 16:27 "For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works."

You see, there is coming a day when the eastern sky shall open up and Jesus, King of kings and Lord of lords, shall appear with His angels and shall blow the silver trumpet to redeem us from this earth. On that day, we shall see Him in all His majesty. Jesus is the Judge of the earth. He shall judge those who are true believers of Him not guilty of any sins, and He will reward those who worked and were martyred for Him. Works do not get you into heaven, but they get you

rewards after you get there.

Matthew 16:28 "Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom."

Whether this was written for then, or whether it was intended for those of us who read this Scripture now, I cannot say. We know the kingdom is at hand. I personally believe this could be the time when the great tribulation begins or it could be the time that the falling away of the church begins. There will be some who will not die, but will be changed in the twinkling of an eye, and go to meet the Lord in the air. We will not know the day or hour, but we will know the season is near.

I personally believe that John was changed and carried into heaven without tasting of death on this earth.

Next lesson, we will begin in chapter 17 of Matthew.

#### NOTES

## Matthew 33 Questions

1. What promise did Jesus make Peter about the church?
2. What foundation rock is the church built upon?
3. Who are the blessed?"
4. What did Jesus give to the kingdom of heaven?
5. The true believers' power comes from what?
6. What did Jesus tell the disciples not to tell?
7. What did Jesus tell the disciples that worried them?
8. When Peter did not want Jesus to suffer, what did Jesus call him?
9. What did Jesus give in the way of hope?
10. Peter did not understand the -----of God.
11. What two things must we do to follow Jesus?
12. Following Jesus is a life of what?
13. If we are truly Jesus', our lives belong to whom?
14. What does Gal. 2:20 teach?
15. What is our soul worth?
16. What is the only wealth that matters?
17. When the Son of man comes, who will be with Him?
18. The rewards we receive will be according to what?
19. What will Jesus be called when He comes in the sky?
20. What type trumpet will blow?
21. What is the author's personal belief about how near the coming of the Lord is?

We begin this lesson in Matthew 17:1 "And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,"

Six days are for work (whether that is important here, I cannot say). Whenever Jesus went apart and took anyone with Him, it was always Peter, James, and John. Jesus went often to the mountain top to fellowship with God. Maybe because it would not be so crowded, or maybe He felt a little closer to the Father on the mountain.

Matthew 17:2 "And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light."

This, to me, is the same Light that was on the mountain when Moses was there 40 days and nights. He came down the mountain with his head so bright, it had to be covered, so that it would not blind the people. Jesus is the Light of the world. This Light that was present at the transfiguration was a presence of the Godhead. We know that in heaven there is no need for the sun or moon, because of the presence of the Light of Jesus. I really believe that Peter, James, and John, just for a brief moment, saw Jesus in His heavenly glory. White like this means purity to the ultimate (free from all sin). There surely was a presence of Light so great, that it was breathtaking.

Matthew 17:3 "And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him."

It was really interesting that Moses and Elijah appeared with Jesus at this transfiguration. Many believe these two represent the law and the prophets. Certainly, that was who they were. Moses received the law from God for the people, and Elijah was a very prominent prophet. At the least, these two were their representatives of "gone-on" saints to encourage Jesus about His crucifixion. Perhaps, this all happened so later on, after looking back on this incident, these special disciples would understand better the person of Jesus, and be able to share this with the others and with us.

Matthew 17:4 "Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias."  
Matthew 17:5 "While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him."

Peter, in this statement, seemed to put Jesus in the category of Moses and Elijah. He had not brought Jesus down, he was just in awe of what he saw, and put Moses and Elijah up. God told him instantly the position of Jesus; that Jesus only was His Son. Peter, James, and John would never forget this incident. They knew the voice from the bright cloud was God the Father, and they had seen Jesus step out of His earthliness and take on His heavenliness for a short time. The message from the voice was emphatic. "Hear ye him." In other words, do not question what He (Jesus) said, just do it.

Matthew 17:6 "And when the disciples heard [it], they fell on their face, and were sore afraid."

This is the effect when anyone encounters God the Father in any way. The awesomeness of the Father instantly puts you on your face, and you are frightened overwhelmingly. I question anyone who says they have had an encounter with the Father, unless they were face down before Him and totally afraid.

Matthew 17:7 "And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid." Matthew 17:8 "And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only."

Jesus understood their fear and came, and touched them and comforted them. They had been so terrified, that they did not even look up after the bright cloud appeared, until Jesus told them to. Jesus now assumed His role for this earth and looked no different than He had before they came to this mountain. These three disciples, for all their lives, would have a fuller understanding of Jesus than any of the others, because they were allowed to look into the heavenly for just a short time and see Jesus in His heavenly role.

Matthew 17:9 "And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead."

The other disciples were not supposed to know of this, or they would have gone to the mountain with Jesus. Jesus was willing for the events of His crucifixion to take place. This vision, if told, might alter that. It is difficult to understand after Peter had seen this, that he would deny the Lord Jesus Christ.

Matthew 17:10 "And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?"

You see, even the disciples had listened to these Israelite laws and dogmas and believed a certain amount of all this. They knew that Malachi 4:5 said Elijah would come before the Day of the Lord. Some translations say one like unto Elijah.

Matthew 17:11 "And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things." Matthew 17:12 "But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them."

Jesus explained to His disciples that the Bible is true. Everything that had been foretold would happen. One like unto Elijah, with the spirit of Elijah had already come. He preached, repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. He explained to them that this Elijah had suffered for God, and so would He likewise suffer on the cross. It is interesting, to me, that Elijah was carried to heaven in a whirlwind and did not die as did John the Baptist, who was beheaded.

Matthew 17:13 "Then the disciples understood that he spake unto

them of John the Baptist."

We do not understand fully the things of God, so this is one of those times when there is not a good explanation. If the above Scripture and the one in Malachi should read "one like unto Elijah", we could understand this more clearly. This particular thing, I will not even attempt to explain. We will leave this as one of God's great mysteries.

Matthew 17:14 "And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a [certain] man, kneeling down to him, and saying,"  
Matthew 17:15 "Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water." Matthew 17:16 "And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him."

Sometimes demonic influences are so great in a person that it will cause them to do very irrational things. This boy had to be under the total control of the devil to be in this condition.

Matthew 17:17 "Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me."

Jesus upbraided the disciples here, and also all who do not believe. Their lack of belief was overwhelming to Him. He was really saying, how long do I have to put up with your unbelief?

Matthew 17:18 "And Jesus rebuked the devil; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour."

Nothing is impossible with Jesus. He just spoke the Word and this boy was free.

Matthew 17:19 "Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?"

This would be the question of many ministers today. Most have no power to deliver anyone from anything. They do not ask in public, They do not want to admit to the people, that they do not have the power to do this.

Matthew 17:20 "And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you."  
Matthew 17:21 "Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting."

Jesus explained that faith is the ingredient that brings miracles. You can have a miracle just as big as your faith is. Sometimes however, our faith is not strong enough, and then we must tap in to the faith of God. This is done by fasting. During a fast, God feeds us of Himself and His power. His faith operating in us brings tremendous miracles. Then you could say unto a mountain of problems, be removed, and it will have to move. A literal mountain would have



to move, as well. I like the sentence "nothing shall be impossible unto you". Say that over and over, because with God you can do anything.

We will begin the next lesson at verse 22.

NOTES

## Matthew 34 Questions

1. What three disciples did Jesus take to the mountain with Him?
2. Which was James' brother?
3. Why did Jesus go to the mountain?
4. What shone as the sun?
5. How white was His raiment?
6. Who is the Light of the World?
7. Why is there no need for the sun and moon in heaven?
8. What is the author's special belief that Peter, James, and John were allowed to see for a moment?
9. White like this means what?
10. What two men appeared with Jesus?
11. What did they represent?
12. What would these three disciples realize later?
13. What mistake did Peter suggest?
14. God the Father appeared in what?
15. How did they know it was God?
16. What did He say "do", pertaining to Jesus?
17. Who straightened Peter out instantly about the difference in Jesus, Moses, and Elijah?
18. What effect did God's voice have on Peter, James, and John?
19. What two things always happen when you are in the presence of the Father?
20. How did Jesus comfort them?
21. Why would these three know more about Jesus than anyone else?
22. What did Jesus tell them to do about this?
23. Who was prophesied to come before the great and terrible day of the Lord?
24. What book in the Old Testament prophesied this?
25. Who did the disciples understand was the spirit of Elijah?
26. What happened to him?
27. What was wrong with the boy brought to Jesus for healing?
28. What did this spirit cause him to do?
29. Why did Jesus say the disciples could not heal him?
30. Jesus said if you had faith as a mustard seed, you could do what?
31. What is the limit of a Christian?
32. Why do we fast?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 17:22 "And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:" Matthew 17:23 "And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry."

Jesus did not want His death on the cross to come as such a shock to the disciples. He was trying to explain to them that this was the salvation plan that had been worked out from the beginning of the earth. He was trying to make them understand that this was victory, not defeat, because He would rise again. They really could not receive the fact that He had to die this cruel death. They were saddened knowing of His eminent death to the world.

Matthew 17:24 "And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute [money] came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?"

There is no other way to say this. These were tax collectors of whom Matthew had been one, until Jesus called him to follow Him. This is a very good question, and one many Christians are having to pray long and hard about today. Many legislators are trying to get a bill passed that would cause churches to pay taxes. Most preachers, and in fact all Christians, believe if church and state truly are two separate things, then churches should not be required to pay taxes. In my opinion, I cannot see a church paying taxes to a government who is doing things the church could not approve of. One thing in particular is using government money to print Play Boy for the blind. These people are suffering more than one kind of blindness, if they even want it changed. God's money cannot be used for unholy purposes. God's money should be used only for the purpose of winning more souls, and for no other purpose. To answer the question that the tax man asked Peter: Jesus had not been paying taxes up until this time. Peter spoke too quickly, again.

Matthew 17:25 "He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?"

You see, Peter answered without checking with Jesus first. Peter was in error. Jesus asked Peter, what made you think that? You see, there is a really good argument for separation of church and government right here. Christians are children of God. He (Jesus), also, said that kings collected taxes from strangers (their own children never paid taxes). That would be a good system here in the U. S. today. If we would charge a tariff on all the goods that are brought in here, and remove the taxes off our own citizens, we would not have a trade imbalance. Our citizens would invest at home, and imports would be sharply curtailed, and our government would be on a much sounder system. The answers to even the problems with the government are in the Bible. Imports are what has ruined our economy, and U.S. citizens' capital investments overseas.

Matthew 17:26 "Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free."

Never has there been a time in history when the people of the United States have been more afraid of their own government. People, who have never cheated a nickel on their income tax, live in mortal fear that they will be checked and found to be wrong on something on their tax form. They pay millions of unnecessary dollars out to certified public accountants, so that they can feel reasonably sure that this will keep them from the dreaded audit of the Internal Revenue Service. This is not right. The United States was established on Bible principles and their people should not live in constant fear of their own government. This Scripture above, said the children are free. This is certainly not true in our society today. There needs to be some way, like a national sales tax, where the people can pay as they go and not be worried to death with all this government red tape. I do not believe anyone truly wants a free ride. Everyone really wants to do their share. They just do not want to be scared to death of their own government.

Matthew 17:27 "Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee."

Jesus was saying to Peter: we do not owe them anything, but even though we do not owe them, we will pay them, to keep from causing a problem. Jesus had already made His point to Peter, that they did not owe any thing. The word "notwithstanding" means nevertheless, or in spite of the fact. Going against the truth of the matter, or to make it short, pay them even if we do not owe. Then Jesus gave Peter an unusual answer. He said go fishing. This just shows the Divine Provision that God has for His own. Everything on this earth belongs to God, including the money. God, or His Son, can request it to be at a given place at a given time, and it would have to obey. This had to be a gold coin to be enough to pay both taxes. "Gold" means purity of God. God is our provision even for our taxes.

Next lesson, we will begin in chapter 18 of Matthew.

## Matthew 35 Questions

1. Who did Jesus tell that He would be betrayed?
2. Where were they at the time?
3. When they killed Him (Jesus), what would happen?
4. Did the disciples understand His death, or His resurrection?
5. How long had this been planned?
6. In what city were they when the tax collector came?
7. Who did the tax collector come to?
8. What question are Christians praying hard about today?
9. Preachers and Christians believe what about the relation of church and state?
10. What is the only thing God's money should be used for?
11. What example did Jesus give, that would make you believe natural residents should not pay tax?
12. Kings collect taxes from whom?
13. The answer to the problems with the government is found where?
14. In verse 26, the children were what?
15. What country was established on Bible principles?
16. What does the word "notwithstanding" mean?
17. What did He tell Peter to do?
18. Where would he find the money?
19. What type coin was it, probably?
20. Why was it in the fish's mouth?
21. What does this show?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 18:1 "At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?"

It did not say which disciple was asking this question, or whether it was all of the disciples. It seems as though the question was asked because one of them was not humble enough. No one wants to play second fiddle. Everyone of them was trying to be first. This was really not the right attitude. Many preachers today are so jealous of some other preacher that they are offended, if someone gets saved in another church. If we are really in tune with God, it is not where they are saved, but to get them saved somehow by someone.

Matthew 18:2 "And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them," Matthew 18:3 "And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."

Little children have a special humbleness and are easily taught. Most adults are not this way. When a person is converted, it means he turned from his old ways and starts out brand new. A little child is enthusiastic and eager to learn, and has a love that is forgiving. He has simple trust. Most adults are different, constantly comparing their lives with someone else. Few have confidence or faith in anyone or anything.

Matthew 18:4 "Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven."

Humbleness is the most important thing. We must not think too highly of ourselves, but instead, decide of our own free will, to be totally controlled by the will of God.

Matthew 18:5 "And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me."

When you receive a little child, you can't expect to get a reward in return, because he has nothing to give but himself. Helping a child of God, expecting nothing in return, brings a satisfying feeling. It, also, stores up treasures in heaven for you. "...Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me." Matthew 25:40. God is the rewarder of those who love and care for children.

Matthew 18:6 "But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and [that] he were drowned in the depth of the sea."

If there ever was a time in all of history when children were being led to the slaughter pen by the adults around them, it is now. Children do not have good, wholesome role models. Their own parents watch bad television shows, and even worse, allow the children to watch. Most parents of today could really care less what their

children do, as long as they stay out of their way. This is a self-centered, selfish generation of young parents on the whole. Most are more concerned with their own likes and dislikes. They totally forget about the good and welfare of their children.

Child abuse among parents, who are on drugs or alcohol, is very prevalent. One fourth of the children have been sexually abused by relatives before they are of age. These people may not get caught and sent to jail, but God is taking note of every offence. To be punished by society is bad, but nothing to compare with the punishment from God. The authorities can destroy your body, but God can destroy your body and commit your soul to a burning hell forever.

Matthew 18:7 "Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!"

There are going to be problems in the world, until Jesus comes back and sets up His kingdom here, and reigns for 1,000 years. The sad thing today is that offensive things to God are not only being promoted by the worldly people, but so-called Christians are promoting unholy living. Judgement begins at the house of God. The punishment will be greater for those who know to do right, and still choose to do wrong.

Matthew 18:8 "Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast [them] from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire."

I believe the "...hand..." mentioned, here, can be the physical hand which wants to steal, or do other physical sins. Truly it would be better to cut it off, than to be using the hand to sin. We always look a little closer at the spiritual side. The body of Christ, or the church, is made up of hands, feet, eyes, etc. This could very well mean, from the spiritual standpoint, friends or brothers or sisters in Christ who lead you into various types of sin against God.

False teachings in the church and promiscuous activities which lead to sin are things we must separate from, if we expect to be in heaven some day. God expects Christians to live holy lives consecrated to Him, not compromising with the world as so many churches are today. We must not be part of any body, or church, which tends to please the flesh, and not the Spirit. A body, or church, which is involved in compromise can walk you right into the fire of hell. I really believe this is the hand and foot spoken of here.

Matthew 18:9 "And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast [it] from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire."

Here, again, I believe Jesus was speaking of life (eternal life). The very thing that got Eve into trouble was the lust of the eye. Perhaps, to avoid the lust of the eyes was why the very early churches had a divider to separate the men and women. Some of the things that have been added to church services in recent months, I believe,

encourage lust of the eyes. It is a very dangerous thing, in my opinion, to have men gazing on women and their forms during church. Men and women should have their minds and spirits stayed upon God. Lust of eyes can certainly form the thought pattern for sin. We need to bring reverence for God back in our church services.

Matthew 18:10 "Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven."

It seems, here, that God has appointed one or more angels to each person, even from birth, to minister to that individual. It, also, appears from this, that God takes extra special care of babies and children. Children are so vulnerable to the wiles of adults. I believe "...despise...", here probably, covers abuse of all kinds that some adults perpetrate on helpless children.

Personally, I believe that children of all ages can be saved. I was under five years of age myself, when I made my first commitment to God. Jesus said "...Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven." Matthew 19:14. We are all God's children, if we are Christians. Age, sex, and color make no difference to God. God gives special attention to those who are unable to help themselves. These angels could be easily dispatched to minister to one of these children in need. I, also, am thoroughly convinced that God has a special love for the young. I believe all children who have not reached the age of accountability will be saved. Jesus made this clear when He appeared, for the first time, in the temple at twelve years of age. Jesus said in Luke 2:49, "...I must be about my Father's business..." There was silence, until Jesus was twelve.

Matthew 18:11 "For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost."

Without the Savior all mankind would be lost. There is not even one who is worthy to be saved aside from the saving grace of Jesus Christ.

Matthew 18:12 "How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray?"  
Matthew 18:13 "And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that [sheep], than of the ninety and nine which went not astray."

This is a strange and very true statement. The ninety and nine were secure and in no danger. The one who was lost and separated was in great danger. The delight of the enemy is to get one separated from the others, that he might destroy the one. The Shepherd is not willing to lose even one. We read in Second Peter 3:9 that the Lord "...is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance."

The Lord died for us as individuals. He loves each one of us, one at a time. When one sinner comes to repentance, the angels in heaven rejoice. The



ninety and nine were already safe. The one was lost. Jesus came to save the lost.

V-14 "Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish."

The will of the Father is that all will be saved. That was the purpose of the crucifixion of Jesus. He died for all of us, one at a time. His blood cleansed each of us as individuals.

We will continue in Matthew chapter 18 in lesson 37.

## Matthew 36 Questions

1. What question did the disciples ask Jesus?
2. What was wrong with this question?
3. What did Jesus do before He answered them?
4. What answer did He give?
5. What are two things children have that most adults are short of?
6. What must we become to be great in heaven?
7. If you receive a little one, who are you really receiving?
8. What would be better for one that offends a child?
9. What is wrong in our society that causes children to grow up bad ?
10. What percent of children in our society have been sexually abused?
11. Why would it be better to be punished by society than by God?
12. The world is rotten, but who will receive greater punishment for his actions?
13. Where does judgement begin?
14. If your hand or foot offend you, what should you do?
15. Does this just mean the physical? Explain.
16. If your friends are doing things that displease God, what should you do?
17. If your eye offend you, what should you do?
18. What do your eyes sometimes cause you to do?
19. Why was there a division between the women and men in the early church?
20. Jesus said "...----- do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven."
21. What does the word "...despise...", probably, cover?
22. What three things make no difference to God when we come to Him?
23. What did the Son of man come to do?
24. What will a shepherd do, if he loses one sheep?
25. What causes the angels in heaven to rejoice?
26. What is the will of the Father?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 18:15 "Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother."

You will notice, here, that there had definitely been an offence committed. Notice, also, the word "...brother..." This has to do with a fellow Christian who has done, or said something. This is not the world who has sinned against you. The best advice in the world is not to tell this to anyone, except the one who has sinned against you. The best time to settle something like this is immediately. If you go to him in love, and not with an arrogant attitude, it will help, also. Usually, just letting the person know that you love him, in spite of what he has done, will leave the door open for settling this. If you can have a prayer together, it will usually settle the whole thing. Friendships that overcome this are usually much stronger. Sometimes, he will not accept you, and we see what we need to do in that case.

Matthew 18:16 "But if he will not hear [thee, then] take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established."

When you take a witness with you, you must be careful to take someone who won't spread gossip. This, also, should be kept as quiet as possible, and try to settle it quietly. These need to be level-headed people who would not get into a heated argument. Then in the next verse, we see what must be, if all of this fails.

Matthew 18:17 "And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell [it] unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican."

All of these situations were between Christian brothers and sisters. If you cannot reconcile the situation even through the church, then you must separate yourself from these people. The Lord tells us not to fellowship with this type of people, just as we are not to fellowship with heathen (worldly) people. Christians must be a separated people, sold out to God. Living wholesome lives before God. We may witness to the worldly people, but must not get involved in their way of life.

Matthew 18:18 "Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven."

The word "...verily..." just means that without question the statement is true. We are living in a world that is controlled by spirits. This is speaking of binding an evil spirit that is attacking you. Jesus gave believers the authority to bind evil spirits, when it is done in the name of Jesus. Christians, through the powerful name of Jesus, can take authority over these evil spirits. We, Christians, can, also, speak a blessing through that same powerful name of Jesus.

Matthew 18:19 "Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven."

This is a very strong statement. When two Christians agree, it seems nothing is withheld from them. When Jesus sent the disciples out to minister, He sent them by twos, probably, because of the power of God that two of them have. The Scriptures say "How should one chase a thousand, and two put ten thousand to flight..."Deuteronomy 32:30.

The next Scripture shows us that this power that they have, is because Jesus is in their midst. Notice carefully that it does not say it might be, but that it will be.

Matthew 18:20 "For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them."

The presence of God is not greater in a group of thousands, than it is in a group of two or three who are gathered in His name. God's Divine Presence is what we should be seeking, more than vast numbers of people.

Matthew 18:21 "Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?"  
Matthew 18:22 "Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven."

Of course, this was not saying 490 times, but was rather saying, every time your brother asks you to forgive him. Seven is a spiritual number. Seven times seventy just means to the ultimate. He is not your physical brother, but your brother in Christ. We will see in these next few verses, that if we expect God to forgive us, then we must forgive, also.

Matthew 18:23 "Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants." Matthew 18:24 "And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents." Matthew 18:25 "But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made."

The custom of the land was that if you could not pay your debts, you went into servitude. Ten thousand talents by our money could be an astronomical figure. In fact, so great an amount that if the whole family worked their entire lives, there would be no way to pay it off.

This is the sadness of our debt we owe. If we worked every day of our lives, we could not pay off what we owe God. Our only hope is that Jesus paid the debt for us. We have been forgiven the debt. We will learn a very important lesson about the condition of our forgiveness in the next few verses.

Matthew 18:26 "The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all."  
Matthew 18:27 "Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt."

This is the very same thing that has happened to us, our debt is so great, there is no way to pay it; so He frankly forgave us. This lord forgave the debt, because he knew it would be impossible for the servant to pay.

Matthew 18:28 "But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took [him] by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest."  
Matthew 18:29 "And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all."  
Matthew 18:30 "And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt."

In the prayer that Jesus taught the disciples to pray it says, "...forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors." Matthew 6:12.

Matthew 18:31 "So when his fellow servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done."  
Matthew 18:32 "Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:"  
Matthew 18:33 "Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee?"

No one appreciates cruelty. This servant was quick to ask for forgiveness for the large debt he owed, but the small debt his fellow servant owed him, he would not forgive. To get forgiveness, we must forgive. Just as the Lord has forgiven us we, too, must forgive our fellowmen when they ask us. This truly was a continuation of what Peter had asked about forgiveness. Not just once, but every time they ask us to forgive, we must; if we expect to be forgiven.

Matthew 18:34 "And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him."

We can ask for no more favor than we give. You can easily see why his lord was so angry, and reversed his opinion on forgiving him.

Matthew 18:35 "So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses."

We must not even take communion, if we have not forgiven everyone. If you have anything against your brother, go and forgive, and then come back and take communion. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. We should ask no more from God than we are willing to do to our friends.

We will begin in chapter 19 of Matthew in the next lesson.

## Matthew 37 Questions

1. When you have a problem with a brother, who do you tell?
2. What might you gain?
3. When is the best time to settle a problem?
4. If he doesn't hear you, what is the second option you have?
5. If that doesn't work, what do you do?
6. What must you be careful to do, when you take someone with you?
7. If no amount of persuasion works, what should you count him as?
8. Who should we not fellowship with?
9. What does V-18 say about binding and loosing?
10. What does ". . . verily . . ." mean in the scripture above?
11. Who has authority over evil spirits?
12. How?
13. What name is so powerful that all spirits obey?
14. How many must agree for a thing to come to pass ?
15. Why?
16. Jesus is in the midst, when how many gather?
17. What should we seek more than numbers?
18. How many times did Peter believe was enough to forgive a brother?
19. How many times did Jesus say?
20. Is this a literal number? Explain.
21. If we expect God to forgive us, what must we do?
22. In the story Jesus told about the king, how much did his servant owe him?
23. How long would it take to pay that much?
24. When they could not pay their debts, what happened?
25. What did the servant do to make him cancel the debt?
26. How much did the servant's fellow owe?
27. Why did the king decide to throw his servant in prison?
28. What lesson can we take from this?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 19:1 "And it came to pass, [that] when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judaea beyond Jordan;" Matthew 19:2 "And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there."

This was the last time Jesus would be in Galilee, until after His resurrection. This was actually the very beginning of the last trip to Jerusalem. It seems in this country area, away from the bigger towns, there was less opposition. Just as today, the humble people can accept the things of God much more readily than the more educated arrogant people, who think they already know everything.

Jesus had just been teaching the deeper things of God in chapter 18. Here, we see He took time to heal those who had needs. Jesus' ministry was versatile. He did not stay on just one subject and teach it over and over. He taught how to live a well rounded life that would be pleasing to God. Jesus not only taught, He healed, He cast out demons, He raised the dead, and He had compassion on the people for even their physical needs. If they were hungry, He fed them. This tells me that God is interested in every facet of our lives.

Matthew 19:3 "The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?"

This was a loaded question. These Pharisees were trouble makers. They were continuously trying to catch Jesus napping, so they might accuse Him of wrong doing. Instead of saying for any cause, they said "...for every cause...". You can see what a difference it makes when just one word is changed. Had they realized who Jesus was, they would have realized that they could not trap Him.

At the time this question was asked of Jesus, there was much opposite opinion on the matter of divorce. Herodias had John the Baptist's head, removed, because John said Herod and she were living in adultery. This was a very touchy subject. The majority of the people were like the people of our day. They wanted permission to divorce for just any little whimsical reason. Those devoted to God, said that only for fornication, or adultery, could you get a divorce. We will see the Lord's answer in the next verses.

Matthew 19:4 "And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made [them] at the beginning made them male and female," Matthew 19:5 "And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?" Matthew 19:6 "Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder."

Just as we should do when we are confronted with questions today by our church members: Jesus answered with Scripture. He said in essence: God made a male and a female to be one, not a male and several females. Definitely not a male and another male, or a female

and another female to mate. God's original plan was that one man and one woman should come together and build a family. So many troubles in our society today are caused by multiple marriages. It is even worse when children are involved. They hardly know who their true parents are any more.

Even worse in God's sight, is for two men to become mates, or two women. God called it unnatural use. This is an abomination in God's sight, and we are seeing the repercussion in our society today (aids). God's plans work. Man's plans fail. Be sure and notice that the male and the female become one flesh. They are not one spirit. The flesh is for use upon this earth. There will be no marrying in heaven. We will have heavenly bodies to house our spirits in for eternity. This fleshly body, that we use here, will not go to heaven with us. It will be changed. When God chooses you a mate, no mere man can tear the union apart. The important thing is to be sure that our choice and God's choice for our mate are the same.

Matthew 19:7 "They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?"

Here, these people were accusing Jesus of contradicting Moses. The opposite is true. God's plans precede Moses'. Moses did not command this anyhow; He just told them that marriage was more serious, than how their oriental neighbors were taking it. There were only two reasons then, or now, that divorce is permissible. Adultery of the flesh or of the spirit are the only grounds for divorce.

Matthew 19:8 "He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so." Matthew 19:9 "And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except [it be] for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery."

Jesus told them, here, that God's will was that they stay together and be one, as He intended from the beginning. The only permissible reason given was fornication. Fornication covers all sex sin: perversion, incest, homosexuality, and adultery; but this word in the spiritual covers idolatry, as well.

Most young couples believe that marriage has to do with the civil law, and that alone. If you are truly married in the sight of God, it pertains to God's law, and the civil law. Many people who say "I do" are not married at all in God's sight. For a marriage to be approved by God, He must be the one we are saying our vows to, along with our spouse. If we are not truly one, with God as the head, our marriage, probably, won't last. True love has nothing to do with lust of the flesh. Jesus was trying to make them understand that God wants a husband and a wife to be one. A house divided against itself cannot stand, Matthew 12:25.

Matthew 19:10 "His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with [his] wife, it is not good to marry."

Jesus, it seems, had further spoken to the disciples about



marriage. They felt that, if marriage was such a permanent situation, that maybe a person just shouldn't get married at all.

Matthew 19:11 "But he said unto them, All [men] cannot receive this saying, save [they] to whom it is given." Matthew 19:12 "For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from [their] mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive [it], let him receive [it]."

Jesus would have no part of their argument about the reasons for divorce, and just picked up with their statement of not marrying at all. This first group spoken of here, either physically or emotionally, have no desire to marry. They were born with no inclination toward marriage.

In some of the oriental countries that had harems, the practice was to fix some of the men so they could not be husbands. This was a cruel practice; treating men like animals.

The third state, here, is when a man decides for the cause of God, not to marry. He keeps himself unattached, so that he can give all of his attention to the work God has for him to do. Not everyone is called to that special separated life. Some who have chosen that type of life do not live up to it. It is better not to enter into that agreement with God, than it is to fall away after they have agreed.

God actually made men and women to marry. There is no sin in marriage, as long as it is according to the plan God has for all of us. God does not have the same plan for each person. We must find the pattern God has for our lives, and live the way He has chosen for us. Jesus was not asking anyone to live without marriage. He was just explaining that either marriage, or non-marriage, is okay, if done unto God.

Lesson 39 will begin in Matthew 19:13.

#### Matthew 38 Questions

1. What miracle, in V-2, did Jesus do for the multitudes who followed Him?
2. When would be the next time for Jesus to go to Galilee after this?
3. Why do humble people accept Jesus more easily?
4. Name five things Jesus did in His ministry?
5. Who tried to tempt Jesus to take sides?
6. What one word did they use to change the meaning of divorce?
7. What sin had Herod committed?
8. What had Herod done to please Herodias?
9. When a man and woman are married, they are one what?
10. When we are confronted with questions about whether something is wrong or right, what should we do?
11. What causes much trouble in America today?
12. What does God call unnatural sex?
13. Who will be your husband or wife in heaven?

14. What did these Pharisees say that Moses commanded?
15. What two reasons are the only grounds for divorce in God's sight?
16. Why did Jesus say Moses had given this opportunity for divorce?
17. What does fornication cover?
18. Are love and lust the same?
19. What error did the disciples get from this?
20. What three different kinds of eunuchs are there?
21. Should a person try to be a eunuch, if God has not definitely called him to do this?
22. Is it a sin to marry?

We will start this lesson in Matthew 19:13 "Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put [his] hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them."

Doesn't this sound like our churches today? They say that little children are not old enough to know what they are doing, and therefore, should not be allowed to come to Jesus. We covered this a little in one of our previous lessons, but it is important enough to touch on again. These little children are just miniature in size. They need the blessings of the Lord, the same as the old. Maybe, if Jesus could touch us at a very early age, we would not make nearly as many mistakes as we do when we wait until after we have lived in the world for years before we come to Jesus.

Matthew 19:14 "But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven."  
 Matthew 19:15 "And he laid [his] hands on them, and departed thence."

Jesus said, here, that little children are usually eager to come to Him, when they are allowed by the older groups to come. Even though a child is, probably, not able to understand all the intricacies of the Scriptures, they can still receive Jesus on faith. Except we come in the innocence of a little child, by faith, you or I cannot inherit eternal life with Jesus (Matthew 18:4, Mark 10:15).

As usual, Jesus paid no attention to the complaints of the disciples. He went right ahead and blessed the children. Then Jesus departed.

Matthew 19:16 "And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?"

It is unusual for the Lord to see one person separate from others. It seemed this person was of some distinction, possibly, the rich young ruler. Some believed that some special good deed done could insure a life in heaven with God. This young man had, probably, been instructed in the Old Testament Scriptures and knew the law (Moses law). At least he had good intentions; he wanted eternal life. He really did not recognize Jesus as God manifest in the flesh, but rather thought of Jesus as a good teacher. He surely admired Jesus and respected His abilities with God.

Matthew 19:17 "And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? [there is] none good but one, [that is], God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments."

Jesus did not explain the commandments, so this young man already knew them. Jesus upbraided him for calling Him good. Notice, that Jesus did not say that He was not good. He just said God is the only good one. The Spirit of God covers Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

Matthew 19:18 "He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness," Matthew 19:19 "Honour thy father and

[thy] mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." Matthew 19:20 "The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?"

Jesus was aware that this young man was familiar with the Jewish law. This young man had attempted to do what was right. He still had no peace within. Doing works does not bring peace. A personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ is the only way to find peace and happiness. This young man was earnest in asking, if there was one other thing that he could do that would insure him a life in heaven?

Matthew 19:21 "Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go [and] sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come [and] follow me."

Really, being perfect does not get us to heaven. Having a pure heart and believing in Jesus and His resurrection from the dead, gets us to heaven. We do know that our treasures should not be stacked up here on the earth, but should be stored away in heaven. God really does not require a person to give up every cent he owns in this world to follow Him, unless it is so important to him that he would choose the wealth over God; if it came to a decision. What ever we have, that is more important to us than God, is what we are required to give. God said, "Thou shalt have no other gods before me", Exodus 20:3.

Matthew 19:22 "But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions."

Here is where the decision is made for eternity with God in heaven, or an eternity in hell. The Bible says that it is difficult for a rich person to be saved. The reason is, that many of them have made a god out of their wealth.

God, as I said before, will not allow us to have anything that is more important to us than He is. How sad! This young man went away not only from Jesus' presence, but away from God for all of eternity. He chose great wealth on this earth in place of heaven for all of eternity. Sometimes, it is just our pride, or our families, or homes, or our recreation. Whatever it is, we must choose to serve God or our pet loves. We cannot serve both.

Matthew 19:23 "Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven." Matthew 19:24 "And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God."

Jesus explained to His disciples that a rich man has a much harder decision to make to follow Him. All of them were familiar with the "...eye of the needle..." entrance in that part of the world. The opening was very low and the camel had to kneel down and go through it on his knees. Jesus was saying, a rich man has to humble himself, and get down on his knees to worship God to receive heaven. Rich people sometimes think too highly of themselves and are not humble enough to kneel to God. Poor people have already been humbled by their position in the community.

Matthew 19:25 "When his disciples heard [it], they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?" Matthew 19:26 "But Jesus beheld [them], and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible."

In the Old Testament, men of great wealth like Abraham, David, and Solomon were the beloved of God. Wealth usually indicated that you were in tune with God. Wealth was a blessing from God.

Now, this teaching was going against all these teachings of the Old Testament. He, also, kept the law of Moses. They could not understand why this young man could, possibly, not be saved. Then Jesus told them that all things are possible with God. Even this wealthy young man could be saved, but he just had to put God ahead of everything else, including his wealth.

Matthew 19:27 "Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?"

Peter, as all the other disciples, had given up everything of this world to follow Jesus. They gave up jobs, families, homes, and all worldly possessions.

Matthew 19:28 "And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel."

Here was the promise that the disciples rewards were not for the here and now. They were for the time when Jesus shall reign and sit on His throne. They will rule with Him. Probably, twelve is a spiritual number meaning those apostles who have given all. They will rule over physical Israel, the descendents of Abraham in the flesh).

Matthew 19:29 "And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life." Matthew 19:30 "But many [that are] first shall be last; and the last [shall be] first."

Those who have not sacrificed to the level of the twelve disciples will, also, be rewarded in heaven, if they have given up personal things in this life for Jesus' sake.

This last statement just means that some in the end time might even be first in the kingdom, even though they were not of the original group. There will be martyrs at the end, who may be high on Jesus' list.

## Matthew 39 Questions

1. What two reasons were the little children brought to Jesus?
2. How did the attitude of the disciples and the attitude of many church people today coincide about children?
3. If we are touched by Jesus at an early age, how might it help us?
4. What does the Scripture "...for such is the kingdom of heaven refer to..."?
5. What did Jesus tell the disciples about the children?
6. What did the young rich man call Jesus?
7. What did he ask Jesus?
8. Who did he think Jesus was?
9. How did Jesus reprimand him?
10. What did Jesus tell him to do?
11. Why did the young man still want an answer after admitting he had kept the law from his youth?
12. What did Jesus tell him to do to be perfect?
13. Why was the young man sad on hearing this?
14. What are we required to give up to be saved?
15. Why does the Bible say it is difficult for a rich man to be saved?
16. What example of an animal did Jesus give to demonstrate how hard it was for the rich to be saved?
17. What must the animal do to go through?
18. What does that demonstrate with people?
19. Why were the disciples amazed at this?
20. Name three Old Testament people who were beloved of God?
21. What did Peter ask Jesus?
22. What promise did Jesus make the disciples?
23. What does Jesus promise believers who give up earthly things for Him? Two things.
24. Why does He say the first may be last, and the last first?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 20:1 "For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man [that is] an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard." Matthew 20:2 "And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard."

Matthew 20:3 "And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace," Matthew 20:4 "And said unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way."

Matthew 20:5 "Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise." Matthew 20:6 "And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?"

Matthew 20:7 "They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, [that] shall ye receive." Matthew 20:8 "So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them [their] hire, beginning from the last unto the first."

Matthew 20:9 "And when they came that [were hired] about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny." Matthew 20:10 "But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny."

Matthew 20:11 "And when they had received [it], they murmured against the goodman of the house," Matthew 20:12 "Saying, These last have wrought [but] one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day."

Matthew 20:13 "But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny?" Matthew 20:14 "Take [that] thine [is], and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee."

Matthew 20:15 "Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good?" Matthew 20:16 "So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen."

The kingdom of heaven spoken of here is the church of Jesus Christ. His followers and workers are the workers in this story. The true story behind all of this, is no matter whether you are saved at a very tender age and work all your life for God; or whether you are saved on your death bed, the pay is the same (eternal life in heaven with Jesus).

There is no work that we can do to pay, it is by grace through faith that we inherit eternal life. We have no right to question the wages He pays. When Jesus worked six hours on the cross (because of His love for each of us), our salvation was paid for in full.

I have been telling you the spiritual meaning of this parable that Jesus had given. There is a physical side, as well. If we make a deal to work for a certain amount, we have no right to question the pay of an other, even though it is much more than we agreed for. When we make a deal, we must stick by it, whatever happens. If, through kindness of the boss, he pays someone else as much as he does us for a lesser amount of time, it is none of our business. He paid us what he agreed to. We can ask no more. What he pays someone else is his business. It is his money. He can do with it whatever he wishes.

I really even believe that there is a third message in this parable for the people who serve God in a ministering capacity. The early ministers, such as Paul, will receive the same reward as someone like a Billy Graham in our day. To make it even more unusual, a nobody who ministers to fifteen or twenty will receive the same as someone who ministers to thousands. You see, each answered the call that God had on his life the best he could. The main thing is not just to be called, but to answer, here am I Lord, send me, and then be chosen of God. Hallelujah!

Matthew 20:17 "And Jesus going up to Jerusalem took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,"

This was not a message for everyone. This was just for His chosen twelve.

Matthew 20:18 "Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death," Matthew 20:19 "And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify [him]: and the third day he shall rise again."

Jesus, in giving this message to His friends, spoke almost as if He was speaking of someone else. He did not use "I" in His explanation. This may very well be because this was not an attack on Him as a man, but rather, on what He stood for and on Him for who He really is.

We need to look at His crucifixion as a perfect Lamb sacrifice that will do away with the sin of the world, once and for all time. Even though the chief priests and the scribes were behind all of this, the Roman soldiers, actually, physically carried all of this punishment out. (Thus the Gentiles). Note also, that this Scripture did not say three days and nights later, but rather, on the third day He shall arise. Jesus was telling the disciples ahead of time, so that they would understand when it happened.

Matthew 20:20 "Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping [him], and desiring a certain thing of him."

This was the mother of James and John (two of Jesus' closest companions). They were sons of Zebedee, or sons of thunder.

Matthew 20:21 "And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith



unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom."

This mother was very proud of her two sons and was trying to put in a good word for them to Jesus. Whether she had been there when Jesus promised that the disciples would sit on twelve thrones beside Him, or not, was not evident. At any rate, she wanted her boys to be right up there at the top with Jesus.

Matthew 20:22 "But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able."

They did not understand truly what they were asking. Jesus was about to be baptized with the baptism of suffering, even to the cruel death on the cross. Jesus Himself, when praying to the Father for this cup to pass Him, even sweats drops of blood knowing the agony. Yet He submits to the Father's will.

Matthew 20:23 "And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but [it shall be given to them] for whom it is prepared of my Father."

James really was a martyr. He was killed by Herod. John knew loneliness and suffered much for Jesus. He loved Jesus so much that he suffered with Jesus on the cross. He was the only disciple present at the crucifixion. John was banished to Patmos in his old age. The place of seating, given by the Father, was not given by great deeds done, but by divine justice. God had preparation made for this, known from the foundation of the world.

Matthew 20:24 "And when the ten heard [it], they were moved with indignation against the two brethren."

Jealousy had risen its nasty head among the disciples.

Matthew 20:25 "But Jesus called them [unto him], and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them." Matthew 20:26 "But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister;" Matthew 20:27 "And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant:" Matthew 20:28 "Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many."

Jesus was almost scolding them for wanting to be greatest. Really, there is no place in Christian work for jealousy. To be great in God's sight, we must humble ourselves to the place of servants. Jesus is our example, and He humbled Himself to the most shameful of deaths, the death on the cross. He came asking nothing and giving everything.

Matthew 20:29 "And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him." Matthew 20:30 "And, behold, two blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried

out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, [thou] son of David." Matthew 20:31 "And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, [thou] son of David." Matthew 20:32 "And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?" Matthew 20:33 "They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened." Matthew 20:34 "So Jesus had compassion [on them], and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him."

This multitude followed Jesus because of the miracles. These two blind men had heard of the fame of Jesus, and they would not be quieted. They wanted to see. They knew that they were not worthy, so they cried for mercy. Jesus, being merciful, opened their eyes that they might see. They knew the fleshly lineage of Jesus (Son of David), not the spiritual ( Son of God). Jesus not only opened physical blind eyes, but also spiritual blind eyes.

In the next lesson, we will begin with the 21st chapter of Matthew.

## Matthew 40 Questions

1. What was the kingdom of heaven likened unto?
2. How much did the householder pay the people to work all day?
3. How much did he pay those that worked one hour?
4. What did the labourers do when they found what he had paid?
5. Why was this fair?
6. The last shall be -----many are called but few -----.
7. What is the kingdom of God a symbol of here?
8. What is the true spiritual story in this?
9. There is no work we can do to be saved. What saves us?
10. How long did Jesus work on the cross?
11. If the boss pays someone else more than he pays us, do we have a right to complain?
12. What is the difference between what a minister of thousands or of ten will receive?
13. What is the main thing for us to do?
14. Who did Jesus take apart with Him?
15. Who would the Son of man be betrayed to?
16. To whom would they deliver Him to be crucified?
17. What day shall He rise again?
18. What must we see in Jesus' crucifixion?
19. Who physically carried it out?
20. What woman came to see Jesus?
21. What other names were James and John known by?
22. What did the mother ask?
23. What was Jesus' answer?
24. Which son was martyred?
25. How did the other ten disciples react to this?
26. What must you be, to be great in the kingdom of heaven ?
27. What was wrong with the two men who cried out to Jesus?
28. What did they call Jesus?
29. They knew that they were not worthy, what did they ask for?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 21:1 "And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples, :

This was the beginning of the last week of the life of our Lord before the crucifixion. The triumphal entry of Jesus into Jerusalem is what we, Christians, celebrate as Palm Sunday. "Bethphage" means house of figs. The Mount of Olives is just outside the wall of the old city of Jerusalem. This time Jesus entered Jerusalem as Messiah. "Messiah" means anointed. They called him King of the Jews in Jerusalem this time. The names of the two disciples were not known.

Matthew 21:2 "Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose [them], and bring [them] unto me." Matthew 21:3 "And if any [man] say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them."

Jesus was to fulfill the prophecy to the very last letter. Not only were they to get an ass, but the colt of an ass, as well. Many feel that the spiritual implication, here, was that the older animal represented the Jews and the younger animal represented the Gentiles. Jesus sent for both Jew and Gentile. The Jews rejected Him as a whole.

This man, who had the animals, was either someone who was already a follower of Jesus, or someone God had divinely placed at this place at this specific time for this specific purpose. I believe, personally, that the latter was true. It had been prophesied by Zechariah in the 9th chapter that He would be riding on the colt of an ass. These two disciples were to walk up to the first ass with a colt and just unloose them and bring them to Jesus. This had to be preplanned of God.

Matthew 21:4 "All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying," Matthew 21:5 "Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass."

Zion is sometimes spiritually symbolic of the church. You see, Jesus fulfilled all the prophecies.

Matthew 21:6 "And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them," Matthew 21:7 "And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set [him] thereon."

The disciples never questioned, they just did whatever Jesus told them to do. They knew that whatever He told them to do, it was right. They took their clothing and made them into something like a saddle blanket for Jesus to sit on, on the colt. This was humbleness to the utmost.

Matthew 21:8 "And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed [them] in the way." Matthew 21:9 "And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David: Blessed [is] he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest."

This multitude with Jesus was not only His disciples, but many of them who had been healed by Jesus. This was a very triumphant entrance into Jerusalem. Their worship of Him was so great that they removed their garments and put them on the road for the ass and colt to ride over. "Hosanna" means save now. This word has been used in services of both Christians and Jews. These people were still calling Jesus "son of David". This is a physical description, not a spiritual understanding of who He is.

Matthew 21:10 "And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?" Matthew 21:11 "And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee."

This was quite a procession of adoration. The people in Jerusalem knew there was some reason for all of this attention being given, so they wanted to know who He was. The multitude did not really understand themselves who He was. They called Him a prophet. The only thing that they knew for sure was that He had healed the sick. They had seen it with their own eyes. That was why they were shouting Hosanna, not because they knew who He was.

Matthew 21:12 "And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves," Matthew 21:13 "And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves."

Jesus came into the temple this time with great authority. He, by force, chased those out who were in there for self-gain. He reminded them that the house of God is a place of prayer. I just wonder what He would do today, if He would come into the churches. So many are not a house of prayer. The world and its ways have crept into the house of God. Compromise is everywhere. I am sure that He would be displeased and do some house cleaning, as He did there in Jerusalem. We forget that God is holy and must be worshipped, not entertained.

Matthew 21:14 "And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them." Matthew 21:15 "And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David; they were sore displeased,"

How dare God the Word to come into the place of worship and actually heal people. How dare the people praise God and cry, because they were touched by Him. It almost sounds like some of the churches today. The reason they did not like it, was because they were jealous.

Matthew 21:16 "And said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth

of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?"

Jesus was speaking of babes in Christ. Those who had not studied the law.

Matthew 21:17 "And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany; and he lodged there."

Bethany (house of unripe figs) was about two miles out of Jerusalem, and it was a convenient place to spend the night, so that He could come back to Jerusalem the next day.

Matthew 21:18 "Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered." Matthew 21:19 "And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered away." Matthew 21:20 "And when the disciples saw [it], they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away!"

The fig tree is symbolic of the Jews, physical Israel, if you will. This is symbolism of the rejection of Jesus by the Jews.

Matthew 21:21 "Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this [which is done] to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done." Matthew 21:22 "And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive."

Jesus reminded them once more, here, that their faith gets answers to prayers. No problem (mountain) is too great for a miracle answer, if we ask in the name of Jesus Christ, the Son of God, and believe in our hearts, it will come to pass.

## Matthew 41 Questions

1. What city was near the Mount of Olives?
2. How many disciples did Jesus send to the village?
3. When is Palm Sunday?
4. What does it celebrate?
5. What does Bethphage mean?
6. What would Jesus be called in Jerusalem?
7. What two animals would the disciples find?
8. What were they to do with them?
9. What do many believe the spiritual implication of the two animals was?
10. Who does the author think the owner of the animals was?
11. Which prophet prophesied this?
12. "Zion" spiritually means what?
13. What did the disciples put on the animal?
14. Who came into the city with Jesus?
15. What were they crying?
16. What did their calling Jesus "Son of David" signify?
17. When the people in Jerusalem asked who He was, what did they reply?
18. What did Jesus do in the temple?
19. What did Jesus say the house of God should be called?
20. Who came to Jesus, and He healed them?
21. When the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things He did, how did they act?
22. Why did they feel this way?
23. Where was Bethany?
24. What tree is symbolic of the Jews?
25. What causes our prayers to be answered?
26. What is the mountain symbolic of?

We will pick up this lesson in Matthew 21:23 "And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?"

They realized that Jesus was taking great authority in the temple this time. They, also, had no idea who they were speaking to. The Sanhedrin had quickly met, and decided they must stop Him any way they could. Instead of realizing these miracles that He performed were authority enough, they were trying to trap Him into saying that God authorized Him, so that they could call this blasphemy.

Matthew 21:24 "And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things." Matthew 21:25 "The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?" Matthew 21:26 "But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet." Matthew 21:27 "And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things."

They were no match for Jesus. They were trapped again. They had not ever questioned the validity of John the Baptist's ministry. John had proclaimed Jesus as Messiah (the Lamb of God).

Matthew 21:28 "But what think ye? A [certain] man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard." Matthew 21:29 "He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went." Matthew 21:30 "And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I [go], sir: and went not." Matthew 21:31 "Whether of them twain did the will of [his] father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you." Matthew 21:32 "For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen [it], repented not afterward, that ye might believe him."

Jesus here, made these hearers be their own judge. The man in this, who had two sons, was symbolic of God. The two sons were symbolic of the Pharisees and sinners. These Pharisees claimed to keep the law perfectly. They had nothing to do with the spirit, just with the letter of the law. The others knew nothing of the law, but eventually accepted the spirit.

God called His son to work in His vineyard (church). The first son showed the repentant heart. This second son stood for the Pharisees with their outward form, but no performance of duty. Jesus made them judge themselves with this parable. Jesus said by this: These repentant shall go to heaven, but you will not make the cut unless you, like them, repent and do the first work. His rebuke, here, was not for those who repented, but for the self-righteous who knew



the law and did not repent. John preached Christ who is the way. Some were baptized of John, but did not walk in their salvation; but these were not even repentant to be baptized. You could also, see the Gentiles in the first son and the Jews in the second. Gentiles-rebellious, but came to repentance. The Jews-having law, eager to obey, but fell short, because of self-righteousness. In this next parable, we will see the vineyard (church) let out to husbandmen (preachers).

Matthew 21:33 "Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country:"

The householder, here, was symbolic of God, who founded a church (vineyard); and God, Himself, built a hedge around it. Who is our strong tower? These husbandmen, elsewhere in Scripture, would be called sheperds. God gives authority in His church to these sheperds wais mostly about the Jewish church, but can, also, be applicable to us, as well.

Matthew 21:34 "And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it."

These servants that went in were the prophets. God wanted to know what have you done with this vineyard I left in your care? He had entrusted His law to these people (what had they produced with it?) We might ask ourselves. What have we produced with what God has given us? Will there be a good harvest? These prophets, God sent, were to carry back a report to God.

Matthew 21:35 "And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another." Matthew 21:36 "Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise."

Notice, who was doing this to the prophets. It was not the ordinary people, but was rather the ones unto whom God had let out His vinyard (church) to. We know these self righteous people did not want to hear the messages of the true prophets. They beat them, and accused them of not being truly sent of God. Does all this sound familiar, not only for the Jews, but for our day right now? A true profit is rejected by most ministers today, because the ministers would have to clean up their acts if they received him. In our society today, instead of killing their bodies, they try to discredit those who bring the truth. God does not like the report He is getting on His church.

Matthew 21:37 "But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son."

Of course, these people were so caught up in the law, that they could not see a loving God full of grace. Here, we see Jesus speaking prophetically about what they would do to Him, the son of God. The sad thing today is that we are crucifying Jesus all over again. Most churches today do not even recognize the Son of God. They do not reverence Him. They make Him just a man. Not only do they not

reverence Him as God manifest in the flesh, but are bringing the enemy's music and dance into the church. If you will, allowing the fruit to be spoiled (compromising with the world). CHURCH WORLD LISTEN TO THIS NEXT VERSE.

Matthew 21:38 "But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance."

People, do you recognize the teaching that would make us Gods? We are not God; We never will be God. We cannot take away His position in the church. We belong to the Son, we are not Him, and we never will be equal with Him. He can share His inheritance with us, but it is His inheritance. Here, again, this passage has many meanings. One of which was that these self-righteous, self-appointed authorities felt if they could do away with Jesus, they could take His place. This was the very thing Lucifer was thrown of heaven for.

Matthew 21:39 "And they caught him, and cast [him] out of the vineyard, and slew [him]." Matthew 21:40 "When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?"

This spoke of the Jewish church, how it rejected Jesus, and how ultimately killed Him on the cross. I say, again, we can see what is happening in our churches, as well. You can hardly find Jesus in most of them today. He has been tossed out in favor of things of the world. You can readily see what God had already begun to do to these husbandmen. Look all around you.

Matthew 21:41 "They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out [his] vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons."

They had told their own doom. The church was taken from them and let out to others. Jesus was making a point here that the Jews rejected Jesus, so God turned to the Gentile. Look on down in history to our day. God wants a church without spot or wrinkle (holy people). God is taking His vineyard back, again, and letting it out to those who will do the will of the landowner. God will not allow the vineyard to be owned by others.

Matthew 21:42 "Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?" Matthew 21:43 "Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof." Matthew 21:44 "And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder."

You see, the cornerstone fastens and holds securely two walls together. I believe these two were symbolic of the Jew and the Gentile. God is the architect. The builder might reject this stone for the corner, but ultimately, the architect has the say and the builder has to bow to His wishes. This symbolism of falling on the stone means—we humble ourselves before God, being brought down by the stone (Jesus

Christ). The next symbolism is saying total rejecting of this cornerstone (Jesus Christ). The next symbolism is saying total rejection of this cornerstone (Jesus) makes the wrath fall on you and will pulverize you. Jesus is Judge of the world. When His judgement falls on the unrepentant sinner, it is their total destruction.

Matthew 21:45 "And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them." Matthew 21:46 "But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet."

We, like these chief priests and Pharisees, must see that He speaks to us, as well. Instead of destroying Him, fall on this rock and be broken of Him so that He will not fall on us at judgement and condemn us to destruction.

## Matthew 42 Questions

1. What did the chief priest and Pharisees ask Jesus in the temple?
2. Who had quickly met and decided to destroy Jesus?
3. Why were they trying to get Him to say that God authorized Him?
4. What was Jesus' reply to them?
5. Whose baptism did Jesus use to make the point?
6. Why did they not discredit John?
7. Who had John said that Jesus was?
8. These two sons, in the first parable, were symbolic of whom?
9. Who was the man symbolic of?
10. Jesus said what 2 went into the kingdom before these self-righteous Jewish leaders?
11. What was the vineyard symbolic of?
12. Jesus was not rebuking the repentant, but whom?
13. Who were the husbandmen symbolic of?
14. What were these husbandmen called in other Scriptures that means the same?
15. When did he send the servants, in the parable?
16. What happened to the servants?
17. Who were the servants symbolic of?
18. Who was doing this against God?
19. Who was the last sent?
20. What did they (the husbandmen) do to Him?
21. What is sad about our churches today?
22. Why did they want to kill the Son?
23. What reminds us, in our churches, of why Lucifer was thrown out of heaven?
24. What is God doing today with the evil husbandmen?
25. Jesus is making a point that the Jew rejected whom?
26. What did Jesus call Himself pertaining to the building?
27. What does this do to two walls of a structure?
28. What were the two walls symbolic of?
29. What is the symbolism of falling on this stone?
30. What does it symbolize for the stone to fall on you?
31. What did the priests and Pharisees think about these parables?
32. Why did they not destroy Jesus then?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 22:1 "And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said," Matthew 22:2 "The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son," Matthew 22:3 "And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come."

The king spoken of, here, is God the Father who is preparing a wedding for His Son Jesus. Jesus has paid for His bride with His shed blood. God has sent out invitations to the wedding. The sad thing is that most of the invited will not come. They are so busy with things of this world they are not interested in coming to this marriage.

Matthew 22:4 "Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and [my] fatlings [are] killed, and all things [are] ready: come unto the marriage." Matthew 22:5 "But they made light of [it], and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:" Matthew 22:6 "And the remnant took his servants, and entreated [them] spitefully, and slew [them]."

These servants, that the master had sent to invite them to the marriage, were prophets whom God had sent to send His message. The disciples would be included in this, also. These ministers, whom that God sent to bring this message, were mistreated; some of them were even martyred. God's first choice had been the physical house of Isreal. They refused to accept Jesus. This "taking light of it" just meant that they did not take God seriously. They only thought of the world, not the everlasting life to come.

Matthew 22:7 "But when the king heard [thereof], he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city."

The wrath of God will come down on those who reject the Lord Jesus as Saviour. He will not always allow the murdering of His servants.

Matthew 22:8 "Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy." Matthew 22:9 "Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage."

This Scripture was just telling of the message being offered first to the Jews. They totally rejected the message; it was then offered to the Gentiles. He had given up trying to get the physical Isreal, and had now sent messengers to the Gentiles.

Matthew 22:10 "So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests."

Christianity was offered to everyone; prostitutes, robbers, adulterers, etc. God has offered salvation through grace to everyone;

The Jew first and the Gentile afterward. A person's past is not important. It is what you do after you are saved that counts.

Matthew 22:11 "And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:" Matthew 22:12 "And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless." Matthew 22:13 "Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast [him] into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth." Matthew 22:14 "For many are called, but few [are] chosen."

The Bible is pretty explicit about Jesus being the way to heaven. Anyone who comes any other way is a robber and a thief. There is only one garment that is acceptable, and that is our white robe that has been washed in the blood of the Lamb. A person can sit on a church pew, and even be baptized, and not be cleansed from all unrighteousness; washed in the blood of the Lamb. Christianity, that is acceptable to God, is a love affair with the Lord Jesus Christ. Pretenders will not be acceptable to God. He will say to them, get away from me, I never knew you. They like professing atheists, will be banished to outer darkness.

The Lord invites all of us to come to Him; but to be chosen of God, we must be washed in the blood of the Lamb, sold out to Jesus, having a brand new heart, and stayed up on the wishes of the Lord. Jesus must not only be Saviour to us, but our Lord, as well.

Matthew 22:15 "Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in [his] talk." Matthew 22:16 "And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any [man]: for thou regardest not the person of men." Matthew 22:17 "Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?"

They were trying to trap Jesus into saying something that would be punishable by death. If they really believed that He was the truth, why would they be trying to entangle Him? God is not a respecter of persons, that part of their statement is true.

If Jesus said "no" to the inquiry about paying taxes, they felt that they would be able to turn Caesar against Him. There were two opinions about followers of God paying these taxes. If Jesus answered with a "yes" or "no" He would offend someone. If Jesus said to pay the tax, the people would be disappointed. They did not believe God's people should pay. They believed in the sovereignty of God. If Jesus said not to pay it, He would be an enemy of Rome.

Matthew 22:18 "But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, [ye] hypocrites?"

Jesus saw right through their little scheme. He rightly called them hypocrites. They said they believed He taught truth, but they really did not believe in Him at all.

Matthew 22:19 "Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto

him a penny." Matthew 22:20 "And he saith unto them, Whose [is] this image and superscription?" Matthew 22:21 "They say unto him, Caesar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's." Matthew 22:22 "When they had heard [these words], they marvelled, and left him, and went their way."

This is not telling you to pay taxes to Caesar, or to abstain from paying taxes. When Jesus had them show a coin, and the coin had Caesar's picture on it, it just meant the Roman government was the ruling influence there. Jesus was not about to get into a political battle. He just said, if you owe any tax to Caesar, pay it. If you owe God anything, pay Him. When they saw that they could not trap Him, they just left. You see, with whatever thing they tried to trap Jesus, they wound up being trapped themselves.

## Matthew 43 Questions

1. With what did he compare the Kingdom of heaven?
2. Who is the king symbolic of?
3. Why would most of the invited not come?
4. When He sent forth the servants the second time, what did He tell them?
5. What did the invited do when they got the second invitation?
6. Who were the servants representative of?
7. Who was God's first choice?
8. When the king became angry, what did he do?
9. When He decided that the first group was not worthy, who did He invite?
10. How was the wedding furnished with guests?
11. When the king came in to the guests, what did he notice was wrong?
12. What did the king tell the servant to do with this person?
13. "For many are called, but few are\_\_\_\_\_."
14. What is the only acceptable garment?
15. If Christianity is not a formality, what is it?
16. Jesus must not be just Saviour, but \_\_\_\_\_.
17. The Herodians and Pharisees came together to do what?
18. What hypocritical statement did they make to Jesus?
19. What question did they ask Jesus?
20. If Jesus said do not pay taxes, whose enemy would He be?
21. What did Jesus rightfully call them?
22. What did Jesus ask them to show Him?
23. Whose picture was on it?
24. They left when they had heard what words?
25. Who was the ruling government there?



We will pick up with this lesson in Matthew 22:23 "The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him," Matthew 22:24 "Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother."

In Acts the 23rd chapter the 8th verse we read Acts 23:8 "For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel, nor spirit: but the Pharisees confess both."

You see, these Sadducees were trying to prove that there was no resurrection. They, like so many of our religious people of today, would not believe anything that they could not see with their physical eyes. (They missed the whole message of faith). Anything that is fact, is not faith. If you are standing on Mt. Ararat looking at Noah's Ark. It would take no faith to believe there was a Noah's Ark. These people had to have physical proof of something that was spirit. The Levitical law said, if a married man died without a son, the brother of the deceased was to marry the widow; and the first child born from that union would actually belong, in name, to the deceased. The inheritance, if there was any would go to this child. Any other children born of this union would go to the physical father.

Matthew 22:25 "Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother:" Matthew 22:26 "Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh." Matthew 22:27 "And last of all the woman died also." Matthew 22:28 "Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her."

These Sadducees had set up a hypothetical situation, first of all, to try to catch Jesus in error. They really did not want an answer to their question. They were just trying to prove by Jesus, that there could not possibly be a resurrection. They remind me so much of people of our day who know the letter of the word, but do not comprehend it spiritually. These Sadducees were trying to fit the laws of this physical earth into the heavenly.

Matthew 22:29 "Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God."

Jesus went right to the question these Sadducees had asked. They were thoroughly convinced of this one thing. Jesus' reprimand of them was two fold (you do not know and understand the Scriptures, and you under-estimated God.)

Matthew 22:30 "For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven."

Angels are ministering spirits, not flesh and blood beings like here on this earth. I am not saying we shall not have a body. We shall have a heavenly body (changed in the twinkling of an eye).

Angels (spirit beings) do not marry. Marriage is an earthly relationship and has no part in heaven. It is a function of the earth to populate the earth. Without death being in the picture, there is no need for birth. Mankind will be an eternal being in heaven.

Matthew 22:31 "But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying," Matthew 22:32 "I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living."

This does not mean that God is just God of this earth. This means there is life after death, as we know it here on earth. God called Himself "I AM" to Moses. This was a special name showing His eternity. Jesus is Lord of the dead (to this earth) and the living. In fact, a person truly never dies. We choose where we will spend this eternity either in heaven or hell, but we never die. We have a new body suited for all of eternity. A body that does not age and does not function exactly like our body of flesh and blood that we use here on earth.

Matthew 22:33 "And when the multitude heard [this], they were astonished at his doctrine."

Jesus, at that time, had not risen from the grave, as an example of how we will, also, rise. This was very confusing to people who could not accept anything that they could not see with their physical eyes. The only thing that the Pharisees and the Sadducees could agree on was that they both were trying to discredit Jesus.

Matthew 22:34 "But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together." Matthew 22:35 "Then one of them, [which was] a lawyer, asked [him a question], tempting him, and saying," Matthew 22:36 "Master, which [is] the great commandment in the law?"

It seems that one group gave up, and another came. In this particular case, the cross examination was done by a very learned fellow of the law. This was no ordinary man. He had studied the Scriptures in their best schools. Surely he would be able to trip Jesus up. It seemed there were so many laws, that perhaps this lawyer learned in the law, would be able to trip Jesus up. Maybe the lawyer, himself, really did not want to know.

Matthew 22:37 "Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind." Matthew 22:38 "This is the first and great commandment."

This one Scripture tells so much. If we could truly do this one, then we would never sin again. If we could truly give all our love to God, make the desires of our hearts be His will for us, keep our minds stayed upon Him rather than on things of the world; we would have our relationship with Him pleasing unto Him. We would follow all of His instructions about all of the other things, because we would be seeking to please Him. This the great commandment. If God is first in our lives, we have our lives in order.

Matthew 22:39 "And the second [is] like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." Matthew 22:40 "On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets."

This Scripture rounds the first out. We would do no murder, steal, lie, bear false witness, or covet if we loved our neighbor as ourself. If we truly love God and want to please Him, we will love our neighbor; because He commands us to do just that. Just as Jesus said, these two cover all the commandments. Take notice, here, that it is natural for us to love ourselves, as well.

Matthew 22:41 "While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them," Matthew 22:42 "Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, [The son] of David."

This is really the problem in our churches today. Most do not realize who the person of Jesus is. Just like the Pharisees thought Jesus was the descendent of man, that is what most believe today. The problem with believing miracles, is that we have decided that Jesus was man walking around on this earth; when, in fact, He was God the Word, who took on the form of flesh and dwelt among us. We limit Jesus, because we do not truly understand who He is. We know that we are limited in what we can do, so we, believing that Jesus was man, have reduced Him to the point that we believe that he is limited as we are. Just His name (Emmanuel) tells us that He was God with us.

Matthew 22:43 "He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying," Matthew 22:44 "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?" Matthew 22:45 "If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?"

You see, the Spirit of Jesus Christ is eternal. He has used many different names from time to time, but they are all the same Spirit. The only time He used the name Jesus Christ, was for His short stay on the earth. When He returns, we will know Him as Lord of lords and King of kings. One of His names in heaven was the Word of God. You see, what ever name He uses describes the job He is fulfilling at the moment. He is the second person of the Godhead. Even though He was counted in the line of David, He was David's Lord. We cannot comprehend, as well as we should, all of this until it is revealed to us by the Holy Spirit of God. Just as we can't answer every little aspect of this until we learn the secret of God, neither could these Pharisees, as you can readily see in the next verse.

Matthew 22:46 "And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any [man] from that day forth ask him any more [questions]."

Jesus' answers were so complicated, that they were beyond their comprehension. Instead of them trapping Jesus, He trapped them at every question.

We will begin in Matthew chapter 23 in the next lesson.

## Matthew 44 Questions

1. What was the Sadducees' belief about the hereafter?
2. What did they remind Jesus about what Moses told them concerning men who die without a son?
3. Anything that is fact is not \_\_\_\_\_?
4. These people wanted what kind of proof?
5. By Levitical law, if a man's brother marry the deceased's wife and bears a child, who does the first child belong to?
6. How many brethren are in this story they told to Jesus?
7. What question did they have for Jesus?
8. What were they really trying to prove?
9. How does this remind us of people today?
10. What two ways did Jesus say they err?
11. In the resurrection, what is the state of the married?
12. Why was marriage established on the earth?
13. What three Old Testament patriarchs were used as examples to prove that God is God of the living?
14. This does not mean that God is God just here on the earth, what does it mean?
15. What were the multitude astonished at?
16. What was the only thing that the Sadducees and the Pharisees could agree on?
17. What question did the lawyer ask Jesus?
18. What is the first and great commandment that Jesus gave him in answer?
19. What one thing puts our life in order?
20. What was the second commandment He gave?
21. Jesus said this covered all of what?
22. What question did they give?
23. What answer did they give?
24. Relate that to our modern churches?
25. Why is it hard for most people to believe in miracles today?
26. What one word tells us who He is?
27. What question did Jesus ask them that they had no answer for?
28. Who is Jesus, really?
29. Why did they stop asking Him questions?
30. Who trapped who in the end?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 23:1 "Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples," Matthew 23:2 "Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat:" Matthew 23:3 "All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, [that] observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not."

This is very interesting. These scribes and Pharisees knew the letter of the law. They have learned the law of Moses with no exceptions. They are quick to preach that everyone had to keep the law. There was just one catch to all of this. They preached against the very things they did themselves. They were without excuse, because they sinned with full knowledge that it was wrong. Jesus said it was okay to listen to them, but don't pattern your life after theirs.

Matthew 23:4 "For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay [them] on men's shoulders; but they [themselves] will not move them with one of their fingers." Matthew 23:5 "But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,"

These scribes and Pharisees were much like the leaders of many religions today. They put needless burdens on others and bare no burdens themselves. With them, their religion was just a formality. It really had no real meaning to them. It really was just a front put up to make others conform to the way they wanted things. You really could not call this true belief, it is just religion. This religion that they were practicing was just so others could see them. In the Sermon on the Mount, this type of religion was described as, they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God. The word "phylacteries" had to do with the little cube worn on the head or under the left arm that had sections of the law written on it. This area spoken of as "enlarging the borders of their garment" were tassels worn at the corners of the garment. They were made of blue and white thread to remind of the miracles of God. This religion had much pomp and show. They were more eager for the praises of men, than of God.

Matthew 23:6 "And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues," Matthew 23:7 "And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi."

"Rabbi" means my master. These positions in the community and at special occasions were fought over, because if you sat in this position, you were thought of as someone with great authority. Jesus told us in another Scripture, to not think of ourselves too highly. Pride and arrogance have been the downfall of many. This attitude of wanting the community to look up to you, like they wanted position here, had nothing to do with worshipping God. Most people who go to church for this reason, get very little out of church. God loves an humble spirit. In many cases, people who want great positions in churches are not in church to worship God. They are there to be seen by their neighbors.

Matthew 23:8 "But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, [even] Christ; and all ye are brethren." Matthew 23:9 "And call no [man] your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven." Matthew 23:10 "Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, [even] Christ."

Here, again, we see that we should not try to elevate ourselves to the position of God the Father, or God the Son. We must not try to bring them down to our level or try to push ourselves up to Their level. Let them be God, and us Their followers.

Matthew 23:11 "But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant." Matthew 23:12 "And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted."

A good example of the above, is that the head, or pastor, of the church is called a "minister". He, or she, is to minister to the needs of the people. It is a little bit like a balloon. If you blow yourself up too much, the balloon will burst. That is what happens to people as well. Let someone else build you up. Do not get to thinking too highly of yourself. When you do you are riding for a fall.

Matthew 23:13 "But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in [yourselves], neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in." Matthew 23:14 "Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation." Matthew 23:15 "Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves."

A hypocrite is someone who says one thing, and does something totally different. He shows the world one face, and lives an entirely different life at home. This, perhaps, could be why so many preachers' children turn away from the church. They see their parent showing the church world one face, and they are totally different with the family. Many youngsters who are raised in a strict church environment, turn away when they get old enough to make their own decisions. The "phonies" in the church do more to harm Christianity than to help it. Leaders, who do not live what they preach, will have to answer to God. Sometimes, I believe, the reason some ministers want to get someone saved is so they can brag about it, as if it is a trophy. Truth in ministry is what is needed; a true caring for those who are lost.

Matthew 23:16 "Woe unto you, [ye] blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor!" Matthew 23:17 "[Ye] fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?"

First of all, it is wrong to swear by anything. The Creator is to be worshipped, not His creation. Wrong emphasis is put on wealth in the church, as it is in the world. If we could forget what money (gold) is, and just think of it a tool that helps us accomplish tasks for God, we would be much better off. A tool is only as good as the

person using it. Gold (money) is only as useful as the person who possesses it will allow it to be. There is too much emphasis on money in the churches and not enough on soul winning. God will provide the money for the church, in some miraculous way, if we will be about His business.

Matthew 23:18 "And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty."

The altar should be holy. Those who touch the altar are truly reaching out to God. Gifts are not to be worshipped, by the congregation or the minister. In many churches today, offices or positions in the church are determined by how much a person gives. This is not correct.

Matthew 23:19 "[Ye] fools and blind: for whether [is] greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?" Matthew 23:20 "Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon." Matthew 23:21 "And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein."

Anything at all that we took an oath by, would be actually swearing by the Almighty God; because it all belongs to Him. You can see as this continues on that all of creation belongs to the Creator.

Matthew 23:22 "And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon."

In conclusion to this lesson, if we have learned anything, it is to get our eyes off the material things of this earth, and worship God. Material things that have been dedicated to the temple, become part of the temple. The more we try to separate them, the more we know they are one. We must worship the Creator, not His creations.

We will begin next lesson in Matthew 23:23.

## Matthew 45 Questions

1. Jesus stated the scribes and Pharisees sat where?
2. Should the multitude listen to them?
3. Should the multitude follow them? Why?
4. What was the catch to their preaching?
5. What did the scribes and Pharisees lay on men's shoulders?
6. Why did they work?
7. What was Phylacteries associated with?
8. Whose praise were they seeking?
9. What does "Rabbi" mean?
10. Why did they want the chief seats?
11. What two things have been the downfall of many?
12. What kind of spirit does God love?
13. Who alone should be called Father?
14. Who is our master?
15. Positions of importance are of God. what should we not try to do with Jesus?
16. What should we be happy being?
17. Why is the leader of the church called a minister?
18. When you get to thinking too highly of yourself, what is about to happen?
19. What is it ok to swear by?
20. What should we think of money as?
21. What makes it useful?
22. Besides calling the scribes and Pharisees hypocrites, What did He call them?
23. Which is more important, the altar or the gift on the altar?
24. In all actuality, anything we swear by is swearing by \_\_\_\_\_.
25. When you swear by heaven, what are you really swearing by?



We will start this lesson in Matthew 23:23 "Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier [matters] of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone." Matthew 23:24 "[Ye] blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel."

Mint, anise, and cummin are various spices. Some of them were used for fragrance from time to time. They were ,also, ground up and used for medicine. This really was not what God had in mind when He spoke of the tithe, but they had gotten so technical with their performance they had forgotten the purpose behind it. They were so caught up in technicalities that they no longer were functional as a church. It would be like us getting so caught up in watching the clock and making sure we did not run a service overtime, that we took no time to minister to the needs of the people. How can someone who is blind lead someone? What Jesus was trying to tell them was, stop worrying about formality and get people into the kingdom. Don't worry about who does it or how, just get them saved, and then minister to them. This is the fifth "woe".

Matthew 23:25 "Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess." Matthew 23:26 "[Thou] blind Pharisee, cleanse first that [which is] within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also."

Here, Jesus was speaking of cleaning up the heart of man. Out of the issue of the heart, the mouth speaketh. Some churches today, believe that just being baptized in water gets you saved. This is not true. There are many people who have been baptized in water that are lost. To be saved, A person must have a change of heart. His heart must be washed in the blood of the Lamb, and cleansed from all unrighteousness. He must truly believe that Jesus died on the cross for his sins, and that He rose again. When a person is cleaned up from within, his old desire to sin is washed away, and the desire of his heart is to follow Jesus. You can quickly notice a change in his conversation, his habits, and his goals. In fact the change will be so great everyone will notice. I am not against being baptized in water, but the baptism of the heart must take place first. Truly the order of baptisms is baptism of repentance, baptism of heart, baptism of water, baptism of fire of the Holy Spirit, and baptism of suffering. You see, these pharisees appeared from the outside to be living for God, but their hearts and spirits were not in it.

Matthew 23:27 "Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead [men's] bones, and of all uncleanness."

Once a year, about the fifteenth of the month of Adar, the Jews painted their tombs with whitewash to denote where the dead bodies were. Jesus, in this statement, was accusing these scribes and

Pharisees to be dead inwardly, but whitewashed on the outside. Probably, from the world's point of view (the outside), they were super religious, but it was all on the outside. Inside there were dead men's bones. They were covering up their lust of the flesh with this whitewash. To whitewash something today means, to attempt to cover up something very evil. In our society today, we see this in preachers who lead two lives; one for the public to view, and another private life that cannot stand up under the light. It is explained in verse 28.

Matthew 23:28 "Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity." Matthew 23:29 "Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous," Matthew 23:30 "And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets." Matthew 23:31 "Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets." Matthew 23:32 "Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers."

It seems that these scribes and Pharisees made large graves and mausoleums to say to the world that they were opposed to the killing of the prophets. In essence, they were saying had they been living instead of their ancestors, they would not have killed them. These scribes and Pharisees had not only rejected the prophets, but they had gone even further and had rejected the very Son of God. It is so easy to say what you would do, if you do not have the decision facing you. These scribes and Pharisees were quick to criticize, but they would make a much more serious denial when they participated in the crucifixion of Jesus the Christ the Son of God. Their cup of iniquity would be more than full.

Matthew 23:33 "[Ye] serpents, [ye] generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?"

These phony scribes and Pharisees were like the ones Jesus was speaking of that stand before Him at the end and say, Lord have we not done all these wonderful things in your name? Jesus will tell them to get away from Him, that He never knew them. You see, having a form of religion is just not enough. Our hearts are the judge. Were our hearts right with God; was it the desire of our hearts to please God more than mankind. There are only two ways to go. Those who Jesus does not accept go to hell. To answer the question of Jesus above, there is a way to avoid hell. Turn from this whitewashed outward religion, repent, and make Jesus Lord of our lives.

Matthew 23:34 "Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and [some] of them ye shall kill and crucify; and [some] of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute [them] from city to city:" Matthew 23:35 "That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar."

Remember, these were the religious people of their day, but it

was an outward religion for show. They had nothing good going on inside them. They (as a whole) would not accept Jesus. In not accepting Him, who was the perfect Lamb of God--the perfect sacrifice, it was as if they themselves had killed the prophets that led up to Jesus. Their message was of His coming. In not accepting Him, they did not accept their message, as well.

Matthew 23:36 "Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation."

Jesus, here, was speaking of them rejecting the Savior of the world (Jesus Christ).

Matthew 23:37 "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, [thou] that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under [her] wings, and ye would not!"

Jesus' desire was that the Hebrews would accept His free gift of salvation. They were the chosen of God. Jesus, like a hen that sees a storm coming and gathers her little chickens and covers them with her wings to protect them, wanted to protect them by covering them with His shed blood. They would not accept Him. They went so far as to crucify the Son of God. Jesus knew this when He made this statement and mourned for Jerusalem. "O Jerusalem."

Matthew 23:38 "Behold, your house is left unto you desolate."

Jesus' foreknowledge helped Him see the desperate thing they would do and become totally separated from God.

Matthew 23:39 "For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed [is] he that cometh in the name of the Lord."

This verse 39, I believe, means that Jesus did not appear to these particular people after the resurrection. I believe at the second coming of Christ (when every knee shall bow and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord), these people will realize that Jesus is Messiah. The Israelites have always looked for a Messiah that would be a physical king and save them from their neighbors. Jesus will be LORD OF lords and KING OF kings when He returns to earth. They truly will say, "Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord:."

Next lesson will begin in chapter 24 of Matthew.

## Matthew 46 Questions

1. These woes were spoken to whom?
2. By whom?
3. What were they tithing?
4. What were they omitting?
5. What did Jesus call them when He said they strain at a gnat and swallow a camel?
6. These people had gotten caught up in what?
7. These blind leaders could be paralleled to whom today?
8. What did Jesus mean when He said they cleaned the outside of the cup but inside was full of extortion and excesses?
9. What did He tell them to do about it?
10. What was Jesus really telling them to cleanse?
11. What two things must happen for you to be saved?
12. What is the order of baptisms?
13. What were they likened to in verse 27?
14. Inward they were full of what?
15. How often did the Jews whitewash the tombs?
16. What does whitewash mean today?
17. How did these scribes and Pharisees think they were better than their ancestors?
18. What was worse about the scribes and Pharisees?
19. What two names did Jesus call them, when He asked them how they could miss hell?
20. There is a way. describe how?
21. Jesus said they would be guilty of the blood of two men that covered the Old Testament, who were they?
22. What did Jesus compare His desiring to protect them with?
23. What 3 words indicate Jesus mourning for this people?
24. What did verse 39 mean about when they would see Jesus again?
25. What name would they call Him?
26. What will they do to show that they recognize Him?

## Matthew 46 Questions

1. These woes were spoken to whom?
2. By whom?
3. What were they tithing?
4. What were they omitting?
5. What did Jesus call them when He said they strain at a gnat and swallow a camel?
6. These people had gotten caught up in what?
7. These blind leaders could be paralleled?
8. What did Jesus mean when He said they cleaned the outside of the cup but inside was full of extortion and excesses?
9. What did He tell them to do about it?
10. What was Jesus really telling them to cleanse?
11. What two things must happen for you to be saved?
12. What is the order of baptisms?
13. What were they likened to in verse 27?
14. Inward they were full of what?
15. How often did the Jews whitewash the tombs?
16. What does whitewash mean today?
17. How did these scribes and Pharisees think they were better than their ancestors?
18. What is worse about the scribes and Pharisees?
19. What two names does Jesus call them, when He asks them how they can miss hell?
20. There is a way, describe how?
21. Jesus said they would be guilty of the blood of two men that covered the old testament?
22. What did Jesus compare His desiring to protect them with?
23. What three words indicate Jesus mourning for His people?
24. What did verse 39 mean about when they could see Jesus again?
25. What name would they call Him?
26. What will they do to show that they recognize Him?

We begin in Matthew 24:1 "And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to [him] for to shew him the buildings of the temple." Matthew 24:2 "And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down."

Jesus was speaking prophetically of the destruction of the temple that He loved so well. This was the temple where He had driven the money changers out. He had taught reverence in the house of God, that it should be a House of Prayer. When Jesus (the Lord of the temple) left, it was desolate. The outward magnificence was gone when the holiness was gone. In less than 40 years, this temple would be destroyed in a bloody battle.

Matthew 24:3 "And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what [shall be] the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?"

These disciples had all the things grouped together. One question, when will the temple be destroyed? The physical temple would be destroyed in less than 40 years. The temple of His body would be destroyed in just a few days. When would He return to the earth? In about 2000 years. When is the end of the world? At the end of the 1,000 years of peace on earth. You see, the disciples were wanting to know specifics. They had been listening to the warning to the scribes and Pharisees, and even heard of some of the disciples becoming martyrs.

Matthew 24:4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you."

Jesus warned them. the very first thing, that there would be deceivers. His first answer: "Take heed that no man deceive you". There were even deceivers then and now, but not the magnitude that there will be in the end days.

Matthew 24:5 "For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many."

Even during the time of John, John spoke of antichrists being in the earth. These were not "the" Antichrist, but types of antichrists (those who were opposed to Christ's teachings). Paul spoke of heretical seducers. There were, also, others like Mohammed, that were worshiped instead of Messiah. In our day, there are many people claiming to be Christ. Worse than that, people have begun to deny that Jesus is God the Son. They are bringing Him down to the level of mankind, and they are, also, trying to elevate themselves to the level of Jesus. The deception of false religion is rampant. There are more false gods than ever before. There is a man living in England proclaiming to be Christ, right now.

Matthew 24:6 "And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all [these things] must come to pass, but the end is not yet."

There have been wars raging ever since Jesus made this statement. Wars have been on the increase in the last few years, and especially in the Middle East. Right now there is conflict going on, on every continent. Young people are being killed every day in Isreal. The Arabs and the Jews have been in constant conflict. The protestants and the Catholics are having a ("holy" ???) war in Ireland. There is conflict in the streets in all the major cities in all the countries of the world. The whole world is like a stick of dynamite about ready to explode. There are enough bombs already made to blow the whole world up. It is possible for some maniac to push a button and start an (all out) nuclear war. So certainly, this part of the prophecy is already fulfilled.

Matthew 24:7 "For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places."

Even in world war II, many people believed that this was the fulfillment of this "nation shall rise against nation". Of course, the two big powers with the bomb are the United States and Russia. There is really no peace between them, just a stand off. Russia has attacked countries like Afghanistan in attempt to take them over, and have taken many small countries over to Communism.

I saw a movie not too long ago, and it discussed how many thousands die every day from the famines around the world, Ethiopia and India are both plagued with famine right now. It really seems that the countries with the famine are those who are worshipping cows and other objects of the Creator, and not the Creator, Himself. You really don't know what to do in these cases. Is this God attempting to change them? Should we go in and stop this problem? There are many thoughts on the subject. It really hurts to see the pictures of the starving children. We would surely have to say that the famines are already happening.

Pestilence is another problem. Even here in the United States, pests are producing at an alarming rate. There have been tremendous amounts of insecticide used to stop pests. Some insecticides have been banned, because they have gotten into the water system, and humans have a great amount of them in their blood. We cannot say for sure, but many believe that so much use of insecticide has brought on large percentages of cancer incidents today. This too, seems to have been fulfilled.

Earthquakes have been on the increase. Last year, it seemed that once a week we would hear of a damaging earthquake somewhere. Some in places that I had not heard of before. There was a devastating one in Mexico City. Everyone in the United States has been concerned about a large one hitting around the St. Andreas fault that goes through California. Here, again, we could say that this part of the prophecy has been fulfilled.

Matthew 24:8 "All these [are] the beginning of sorrows."

As I said, it seems that all of the above are already happening.

So we can assume from that, that we are already in the beginning of sorrows.

Matthew 24:9 "Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake."

The account of this in Luke adds "before all these things". We do know that many of the disciples were delivered up and were martyred for the cause of Christianity. I believe that this Scripture covers Christians and Jews. Jews, even in recent years, have been persecuted and martyred. Hitler killed about 1/6 of the Jewish people in world war II. We hear of religious atrocities in Russia today. Many are feeling the hand of persecution. I believe it goes even farther than the physical death of those who stand for true Christianity. In our society today, if a person truly loves God and tries to do something to further the kingdom, he is labeled as a fanatic. Our own little church has been persecuted by the people of the area. Lies have been spread that are so absurd but have been really damaging. Truly, the real believers in Christ are hated.

Our nation, which is classified as a Christian nation, (and certainly did start out as a Christian nation) is hated around the world. The blessings from God have been on the United States, because of the stand we have taken toward Christianity. However, now that so many false religions have entered, it seems that the blessings from God are being lifted. After world II, many Far East religions crept into the country. Eastern mysticism is even infiltrating the main line Protestants churches. Mind control is being practiced and called faith. We see a watered down Christianity that is without power. Second Timothy 3 calls it "having a form of Godliness, but denying the power thereof". Even inside the church world there is bickering, fighting, and back biting. The message of Christianity has been so watered down, that our ancestors would not even recognize our services as having church. Even in our own ranks, some of the new messages have removed the deity of Christ. If you take a stand against these false teachings, then you are classified as being disturbed. If you truly love Jesus, it is time to be "disturbed." You can see, with no problem, that surely this part of the prophecy has been fulfilled, as well. This is the case in the next verses.

Matthew 24:10 "And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another." Matthew 24:11 "And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many."

This is, probably, one of the most easily recognized things that we see in our churches today. One of the most damaging messages being taught today, is that Jesus Christ died spiritually and eternally; that He suffered in the grave for us. Many churches, who in the past have been very strong, are now teaching that Jesus was just a man when He walked the earth. Fifty years ago, had someone attacked the person of our Lord Jesus Christ like this, he would have been run out of town on a rail. Jesus said the church would be called a House of Prayer. You certainly would not call it that today. In most churches, very little praying is going on. It is very difficult to separate the activities that are going on in the church with the activities of the



world. The world has been brought into the church. Very few churches really have services where you can feel the presence of God. We have gotten so worldly that God really doesn't feel very welcome. True repentance and commitment are hardly even part of the function of the church, anymore. Some churches go months and months without one single conversion. False prophets, preachers, and other officers have brought such a watered down version of Christianity into the church that, except for the fact you are in a church house, you would believe you were at some form of world entertainment. The messages and services are appealing to the flesh. Many are being deceived. The only way not to be deceived is to know what the Bible says for yourselves. Read it every day. Ask God to help you. Ask the Holy Spirit to teach you and help you to discern right from wrong. Satan is clever, and he is out to destroy Christianity and the Christians. The only weapons that we have to fight him with are the name of Jesus Christ, the blood of Jesus, and the Word of God. Do not be deceived, learn the warnings in the Bible. Be wise in Jesus. Truly, this part of the prophecy has been fulfilled, as well.

Next lesson, we will begin in Matthew 24:12

## Matthew 47 Questions

1. When Jesus went out from the temple, who came to Him.
2. Why did they come?
3. When Jesus showed them the temple, what did they say about it?
4. Was this prophecy fulfilled? How soon?
5. What questions did the disciples ask Jesus on the Mount of Olives.?
6. What two temples were meant here?
7. Is the end of the world and the end of the age the same thing?
8. What was Jesus' first warning to them?
9. What would these proclaim?
10. What did John have to say about this?
11. What did Paul call them?
12. This man in England, is proclaiming what?
13. In verse 6, He said there would be what?
14. Name 2 groups that have never stopped?
15. What ridiculous name is the war in Ireland known as?
16. Describe the whole world at this moment?
17. In V-7, who is the conflict with?
18. Where are most of the famines? Why?
19. What is the side effect of the pestilence?
20. Name a major city that has recently had an earthquake?
21. In V-8, Jesus said all these signs were what?
22. What begins to happens to Christians everywhere?
23. What two groups have suffered martyrdom?
24. If you love God today, you are labeled as what?
25. Truly, the real believers in Christ are \_\_\_\_\_.
26. Where did the false religious in the U.S. come from?
27. What is one practice of eastern religion that is being passed off as faith?
28. In second Timothy 3, what is the description given our watered down religion?
29. In our ranks, what has been done to Christ?
30. What does the Scripture say will happen among the brethren?
31. Who will arise and deceive many?
32. What is one of the most damaging messages being taught in churches today?
33. If you truly love Jesus, it is time to be \_\_\_\_\_.
34. Jesus said the church was to be called what?
35. Modern messages and activates in most churches appeal to the what?
36. What is the only way not to be deceived?
37. Have all these prophecies been fulfilled?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 24:12 "And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold." Matthew 24:13 "But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved."

Here, we see the condition of our churches today. Some have already thrown up their hands and said, "what's the use?" Iniquity is every where. If you have a television, you know that 90% of the programs are not fit for a Christian to look at. Even on the programs that are classified as having a good moral message, are promoting things like reincarnation. There is just not anything worth watching. Our poor children are subjected to terrible pressures. The evil deeds of Sodom Gomorrah are no worse than what is going on throughout the world today. Our children are being taught that homosexuality is an alternate lifestyle. God calls it an abomination. Old people cannot even go to the store in the large cities. Some one will mug them, and take their money. Nudity, prostitution, and all sorts of crimes are taken for granted as part of society today. In the large cities neighbors do not even know each other. They are so afraid, they lock themselves in their houses. Some even put bars on their windows and doors for extra safety. Love for family and friends has truly waxed cold. Everyone is in love with himself. The children are being taught they are the center of everything, and suicide among young children is rampant. People need God to focus their lives on. Without God, there is no hope.

We see the words "he that shall endure until the end". You see, Unlike what some ministers would have you believe, there is a terrible time of testing. Many ministers have their congregations believing that there will not be problems, if you have your life right with God. What about verse 13, that said you must endure to the end, if you are to be saved? God will bless His own, and if you pray and believe, He will help you through the rough times; but trials and tribulations come to all of us. How we handle the problems is what really counts. When the going gets rough, do we run or stand? Endure does not mean good times. Endure means hang on in the face of adversity. If we plan to be saved, that seems to be our lot. No one knows for sure how soon the end of this struggle will be. Our job is to hang on and give it everything we have. God will help us, if we will resist the enemy. Don't give in. Stay with it. the rewards are great.

Matthew 24:14 "And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come."

The good news (gospel) of Jesus Christ is now being preached throughout the world. Satellite television has carried the message around the world. In the remote areas that do not have television, God has sent missionaries. Everyone has an opportunity to either accept or reject Jesus as his Saviour. If there is one sign more than all others, I believe this is it. The end of the Gentile age is near. The "end" spoken of here, is the end of the age.

Matthew 24:15 "When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place,

(whoso readeth, let him understand:)" Matthew 24:16 "Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains:"

The "abomination", spoken of here, has to do with the evil one who is set up in the temple in the end days. Daniel 11, verses 36 and 37 spoke of this abominable one. Daniel 11:36 "And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvellous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished: for that is determined shall be done." Daniel 11:37 "Neither shall he regard the God of his fathers, nor the desire of women, nor regard any god: for he shall magnify himself above all."

The "abomination", or the abominable one, truly will set himself up in place of God, in the same place where the temple of God sat. There is a Temple sitting there today that is a Moslem temple. Somehow, sometime, in the future, this temple will be destroyed, and the temple of the true God will be restored. To say specifically what this exact abomination of desolation is would be presumptuous. It appears to be when the antichrist sets himself up as God at about the middle of the tribulation period, and requires all to bow to him instead of God. In chapter 12 of Daniel, we read about when this will happen. Daniel 12:6 "And [one] said to the man clothed in linen, which [was] upon the waters of the river, How long [shall it be to] the end of these wonders?" Daniel 12:7 "And I heard the man clothed in linen, which [was] upon the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand unto heaven, and sware by him that liveth for ever that [it shall be] for a time, times, and an half; and when he shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these [things] shall be finished."

The one clothed in linen would be the High Priest of God. It is pretty obvious that this "time, times, and half" means three and one half years. My own personal belief is that the Christians will be here on this earth for three and one half years of the tribulation period. I believe just before the wrath of God occurs, the Christians will be carried away into heaven to meet Jesus in the clouds. Just as the children of Isreal had a time of testing, I believe we, Christians, will be tested to see if we truly "believe", in the face of hardships. These Israelites, who are in Judaea, should flee the city to avoid being forced to bow down to the antichrist.

Matthew 24:17 "Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house:" Matthew 24:18 "Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes."

This reminds us of when Lot's wife was told not to look back. They will be leaving out in such a hurry, that there will be no time for going back and taking care of things at home. These on the housetops, were, probably, up there resting. One stairway went back into the house, but they were warned not to do that, but rather to immediately leave the city. Those in the field, were not to return for personal items, but were to flee for their lives. This is an emergency situation, probably, like it would be in the large cities, if a bomb alert were to go off. The main idea, is to get away as fast as they can, not worrying about that left behind.

Matthew 24:19 "And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!"

The sad thing about mothers (pregnant or carrying a small child) or children is that they cannot scurry out of town as fast. Wars are very hard on women and children.

Matthew 24:20 "But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day:"

Jesus told them, here, to pray so that God will see that this time will not be in the winter, when ice is everywhere making it difficult to travel, and being very cold to camp out. These Jews will not go but just a few steps on the Sabbath. Not nearly far enough to get them out of danger. When they pray, they need to ask God for this flight not to fall on the Sabbath. At the best of conditions, this will not be a fun flight.

Matthew 24:21 "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be."

In this verse, you can easily see why the rush to get out. If this was the siege that took place when Jerusalem fell to the Romans, then close to a million were estimated to die. I tend to believe that this Scripture was not only for that terrible time, but is, also, speaking of another terrible time that will come when the antichrist decides to rule. Many Scriptures have more than one prophecy in them, and I believe, that is the case here. This great siege, I believe, occurs just about the time Christians are caught away into heaven.

Matthew 24:22 "And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened."

These "elect" had been praying for Jerusalem and her people, and God heard their prayers and answered. Personally, I believe Christians are the elect of God. Jews are the chosen. God makes a way out for his own. This will be no exception. God will not allow total annihilation; He will always save a remnant.

Matthew 24:23 "Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here [is] Christ, or there; believe [it] not." Matthew 24:24 "For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if [it were] possible, they shall deceive the very elect."

Here, this is definitely speaking of the Christians. The Bible does not fall in chronological order, on purpose. These false Christs are all around us today. Some of them are openly proclaiming to be Christ, others are just subtly suggesting that they are. We had a man that come to Church in the Wildwood one night and asked me why I did not believe that he was Christ. He did not appear in the eastern sky, so we knew without doubt that he was not Him. False prophets are doing even more damage to the Christians. At least, if someone proclaims he is Christ, those of us that know the Scriptures recognize right off

that he is not. False prophets are another thing, they come in with a message so close to the truth, and many times doing miracles. The only way you can tell the difference is to listen carefully to every word, and check it out with the Bible. Any message that does not elevate the name of Jesus is a suspect right off. God the Father is to be revered. Christians must be a peculiar, separated people. You might ask, separated from what? The answer is, "the world and its ways". As I have said before, if it pleases the flesh, there is something wrong with it, generally. God will not be mocked. He wants His people holy and righteous (without spot or wrinkle). We cannot have one foot in earth and the other foot in heaven. We have to make up our minds who we will follow, God or Satan. The only way that it is not possible to deceive the very elect is, because they have studied and understood (through the Holy Spirit) the Scriptures. Just one wrong word will trigger a red flag in their brains. Pharaoh's magicians could do signs and wonders. Just be careful and check out everything with the Bible.

Next lesson will begin in Matthew in 24:25.

Matthew 48 Questions`

1. Why shall the love of many wax cold?
2. Who shall be saved?
3. How does this describe our churches of today?
4. What percent of television is not fit to watch?
5. What is bad about the programs that try to teach good moral principles, sometimes?
6. What are our children being taught about homosexuality?
7. Why has love for others grown cold?
- 8, What should we focus our lives on?
9. What must we do in verse 13 to be saved?
10. What is our duty toward other Christians?
11. What must happen before the end comes?
12. What does gospel mean?
13. The one sign, more than all the rest, that we are near the end, is what?
14. Where does Jesus say this "abomination" is spoken of in the Old Testament?
15. What is this abomination?
16. This "abominable" has one statement made of him that indicates he has no involvement with women, what is it?
17. The temple sitting in the Holy Place today, is what?
18. What will happen to this temple?
19. When does the "abomination" show itself?
20. What does the man clothed in linen indicate?
21. What does the time, times, and a half indicate?
22. When does the author believe the Christians shall be caught away into heaven?
23. Why will the Israelites in Judaea need to flee?
24. Verses 17 and 18 remind us of what other flight?
25. In verse 19, what is the "woe" spoken?
26. Jesus told them to pray to God that their flight would not be in \_\_\_\_\_ or on the \_\_\_\_\_.
27. How is this tribulation described?
28. For whose sake will the days be shortened?
29. If someone told you that Christ is somewhere you have to go looking for, what should you tell them?
30. Even more dangerous than the false christs are whom?
31. Why are they most dangerous?
32. How is the only way we can tell the difference?
33. What kind of a message is a suspect right off?
34. In what two conditions, does God want His people?
35. Why can the very "elect" not be easily fooled?

We will pick up this lesson in Matthew 24:25 "Behold, I have told you before." Matthew 24:26 "Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, [he is] in the secret chambers; believe [it] not." Matthew 24:27 "For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be."

This was not the first statement telling them not to be tricked into believing that the Messiah would be hidden away, and that they would have to search for Him. If you have to hunt for Him, it isn't Jesus (Messiah) There will be a magnificent Light in the east that, in appearance, looks like lightning. It will shine from the east to the west. This is why many churches face the east, and that people are buried where they face the east. You see, when Jesus (Son of man) comes back, it will not be a secret. The Light will be so bright everyone will know. The trumpet will blow and "the dead in Christ will rise first". "Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord." I Thessalonians 4 parts of v-16,v-17

Matthew 24:28 "For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together."

The only thing I can make from this is that wherever the body of believers (carcass) is God (eagle) comes for them. St. Luke 17:37 the last part, "wheresoever the body is, thither will be the eagles to be gathered together."

Matthew 24:29 "Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:"

The great tribulation actually covers seven years. These seven years are broken up into two 3 1/2 year periods. The first 3 1/2 years is tribulation, and the last 3 1/2 years covers the wrath of God. This is speaking of a terrible shaking in the heavens. Where the sun and moon is actually dark, or whether there are so many clouds covering the earth that you can't see them, is uncertain, At any rate, there will be no light on the earth at that time. This is, probably, during or at the end of the tribulation of God. Even the light spoken of here could be spiritual, as well. We know that these signs in the sky are from the view of the people here on the earth. At any rate, this will be a sign of terror for the inhabitants of the earth.

Matthew 24:30 "And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

Jesus went to heaven on a cloud, and the angels told the disciples that were looking on, that He will come back the same way He went. Here is the fulfillment of that prophecy. He truly will come



back in the clouds. Then He will not be as of one of us, but in Power and Great Glory. This is when we will see Him in all of His heavenly attire. We will know for sure who it is with His eyes like flaming fire, white flowing hair, feet like burning brass. Then He will be King of Kings and Lord of lords. Of course, He has always been that, but then we recognize Him as that. He will come to take His family home.

Matthew 24:31 "And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."

This will be the trumpet of assembly (the silver trumpet of redemption) "four" means all the world. This assembly will not be just Americans, but the true believers from every country of the world. These "angels" are ministering spirits who carry out these orders of their Lord and Master. The "He" here is Jesus (Messiah), but now He is Lord of lords and King of kings.

This "sound of a Trumpet" could be a literal trumpet blowing, or it could be the voice of our Lord sounding like a trumpet. This is the last chronological mention of silver in the Bible. There will be no silver in heaven. "Silver" means redemption, and there is no silver there; because we have already been redeemed. There is only gold in heaven. In the Holy of Holies, there was only gold, because in the presence of God, there was only gold. This gathering together of His elect is what is commonly referred to as the rapture of the church. His church has no denomination. It is "all" who truly believe in the Lord Jesus Christ.

Matthew 24:32 "Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer [is] nigh:" Matthew 24:33 "So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, [even] at the doors."

The "fig tree" is symbolic of the house of Isreal. You remember that was what was meant when Jesus cursed the fig tree. So this was talking about when Isreal lives again. The "blooming" means, to me, when Isreal became a nation in 1948. Here, this Scripture is saying, when you see Isreal reunited and become a nation again, know that the coming of the Lord is near. In fact, even at the door.

Matthew 24:34 "Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled."

Here again, this Scripture was talking about the coming of the Lord. The generation that I believe this was speaking of is the generation when Isreal becomes a nation. The only thing that is left to decide is how long is a generation? It seems that opinion varies as to what a generation is. Some believe that it is forty years, because in Exodus, the children of Isreal wandered 40 years in the wilderness, until that generation died. If 40 is the correct number, then 1988 would be the year of the Lord. It is interesting that the number "eight" means new beginnings and is, also, the number associated with the Lord. I am not trying to put a date on the return of the Lord, but I would not be surprised if it were this year. I do know in my heart. that it is very close. In the words "till all these things be

fulfilled", it is speaking of the return of the Lord. A generation in other places is spoken of as 50 years and as 70 years. We do not know the exact time of the return of the Lord. Only the Father knows that. If a generation is 50 years, it would be 1998. If a generation is 70 years, it would be by 2018.

Matthew 24:35 "Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away."

We know that somewhere in the future, the heaven and earth will pass away, because we read we shall have a new heaven and a new earth. Jesus is the Word of God. He is, also, eternal. By this, we know the Word is eternal.

Matthew 24:36 "But of that day and hour knoweth no [man], no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only."

No one knows for sure the hour or the days that the Lord shall return to the earth. We read in Luke chapter 21 verses 34-36 Luke 21:34 "And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and [so] that day come upon you unawares." Luke 21:35 "For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth." Luke 21:36 "Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man."

Even though we do not know the day or hour, we can see all around us the signs. We have an expectancy in our hearts, if we truly love Jesus. We must not grow lax and fall back in sin as the Scriptures above are saying in Luke. It appears the word "surfeiting" means suffering from the pain of too much alcohol. I guess you could even call it having a hangover. Drinking leads to many other sins, I guess that is why this one was specifically mentioned. Instead of being involved in sin and with sinners, Jesus recommended that we use that time to pray. The moment we are not expecting Him, is when Jesus will return. We must be ready. The Jewish bride waits at her home, until the groom builds her a home approved by his father. The groom does not even know the time. When the father is satisfied that the house is ready, he sends his son for the bride. The groom stands on a hill just outside the city and blows the trumpet. The bride must be ready, and when she hears the trumpet. The bride must be ready, and when she hears the trumpet, goes to meet her groom. They steal away together.

The next lesson will begin with Matthew chapter 24.

## Matthew 49 Questions

1. What are we to do, if we hear that Jesus is in the desert?
2. What shall the coming of the Son of man be like?
3. Why do churches face the east?
4. Why are people buried looking east?
5. Who will rise first?
6. What do you think V-28 means?
7. When will the sun be darkened?
8. When the sun turns dark, what powers shall be shaken?
9. The great tribulation covers how many years?
10. What subdivisions of it are there?
11. When shall the sign of the Son of man appear in heaven?
12. When shall the tribes mourn?
13. How had Jesus gone to heaven before?
14. When shall we see Him in His heavenly attire?
15. What will Jesus be called when He comes back?
16. What is His purpose in coming?
17. The trumpet that blows is a trumpet of \_\_\_\_\_.
18. What metal is it made of? Why?
19. What is referred to as the rapture?
20. In V-32, the fig tree was what?
21. When did Isreal become a nation?
22. What should we know when we see these signs?
23. What is the only thing left to decide?
24. How long do you think it is?
25. What is the number for new beginning?
26. What number is associated with the Lord?
27. What two things, that we classify as permanent, shall pass away?
28. What will we not know?
29. What are we warned against?
30. What are we to do to prepare?
31. What Jewish custom reminds of the second coming of Christ?
32. Who is the bride of Christ?

We will pick up this lesson in Matthew 24:37 "But as the days of Noe [were], so shall also the coming of the Son of man be." Matthew 24:38 "For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark," Matthew 24:39 "And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be."

There are several comparisons we should note here. Noah knew the flood was coming and was preparing as God had told him to do. He did not know what hour it was coming, but he did know that it was very soon. He especially knew it was soon, when God sealed him and his family in the Ark. The world around him did not believe that it would rain. It had never rained before, why would it rain now? You see, that is just like worldly people of our day. They do not believe that the second coming of Christ is near. If you try to tell them, they laugh at you like the worldly people of Noah's day. They were going on about every day life, just as people are today. When the trumpet blows, it will be too late to decide to accept Jesus. It was too late for the people of Noah's day, after it started raining. We have some friends, who sing a song about Noah. It goes like this; "It wasn't raining when Noah built the Ark." You know, if people could look up in the eastern sky and see Jesus in the clouds, they would believe. Jesus doesn't want us to believe in our minds in something we can see. Faith is what He wants from us, faith is believing something we cannot see. When the trumpet blows, suddenly the Christians will be carried away to safety. Noah and his family were in the Ark of safety, and the people around were left for the punishment that lay ahead for them. In the case of the people of Noah, they were drowned. In the case of the people left when Jesus takes the Christians away, the wrath of God will fall. Terrible war, and pestilence, and famine await those who are left. It is certainly not a rosy picture. The thing to do is be prepared to go with Jesus and escape the horrors that await those left.

Matthew 24:40 "Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left." Matthew 24:41 "Two [women shall be] grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left." Matthew 24:42 "Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come."

This will be an individual calling. You cannot hang on to someone and take them with you. Each individual will be judged, whether they will rise to meet Jesus or be left. You see, in these passages, that someone you work with every day may not make it. We should witness to everyone we come in contact with; especially to our families and friends. Time is running out. We must get them saved now before the trumpet blows. We should be anticipating His coming and praying.

Matthew 24:43 "But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up."

I am afraid this is talking to the Christians. Christians must watch for the Lord. We must not decide that He is delaying His coming and get lax in our worship. Christians today are falling away pretty rapidly. Some are still sitting on the pews of the church building, but just in form only. They are looking for entertainment in the church. Worship should be reverently seeking the will of God in everything. God wants our love, but He, also, wants us to revere Him, as well. The church (house) is being broken up by lackadaisical attitude of the sheep, but most of all by the shepherd. You see, if the shepherd and the sheep knew exactly when Jesus would come back, they would be watching and praying that day.

Matthew 24:44 "Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh."

Be prayed up and ready when the trumpet blows. Do not let salvation wait until tomorrow. It might be too late. Just when we think He is not coming is just the hour He will.

Matthew 24:45 "Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?" Matthew 24:46 "Blessed [is] that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing."

Jesus will reward those who are faithful. Ministers are servants to their people. Jesus said the person who is a servant is the greater. A wise servant is one who does not weaken in the faith. This type of faith will stand up in famine or any other catastrophe that might come. The Lord places whom He will over His flock. It is interesting, here, that the Lord expects the preacher to get the flock to the point that they can eat meat and not stay babies in Christ, who can just handle milk and honey. God will bless the servant who is doing the work God has called him to do. Work for the night is coming when man's work is done.

Matthew 24:47 "Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods."

There is a promise in Revelation, that the faithful will reign with Jesus when He sets up His Kingdom on the earth for 1,000 years. This is what I believe the Scripture above was talking about.

Matthew 24:48 "But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming;" Matthew 24:49 "And shall begin to smite [his] fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken;"

Here is where we see the church people, and especially the ministers of God, compromising with the world. They actually are losing the holy reverence and fear that we all should have. The Bible says the beginning of knowledge is fear of the Lord. The Bible is very plain, as well, about not fellowshiping with the worldly. We are to witness to the lost, but we must not get involved in their worldly way. A Christian should never drink with the lost. It is bad enough to drink yourself, but if you drink in front of your weaker brother, you cause him to believe that it is all right. He sins because of your bad example before him. Do not get involved. Witness and go home.

Matthew 24:50 "The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for [him], and in an hour that he is not aware of,"  
Matthew 24:51 "And shall cut him asunder, and appoint [him] his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

In chapter 23, we learned that a hypocrite is someone who preaches one thing and does something entirely different. The "woes" in chapter 23, you remember, were written to this kind of person. As we learned in that chapter, the worst type of hypocrite is for a minister of God to be one. God will cut him loose. He will not claim him. Do you remember what was said in Matthew 7:21 "Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven." Matthew 7:22 "Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?" Matthew 7:23 "And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity."

You see, we might fool the world, but God knows our hearts. We cannot fool Him.

We will begin the next lesson in Matthew chapter 25.

## Matthew 50 Questions

1. Whose days will the coming of the Son of man be compared to?
2. What were the people doing then, as now?
3. What comparison can be made to Noah and the believer?
4. When did Noah know for certain the flood was near?
5. What comparison of the world, then and now, could be made?
6. Give one line of the song about Noah.
7. What is our faith?
8. What can the people, who are not raptured, expect?
9. How does Jesus make it clear that salvation is individual?
10. Who would have been prepared, had he known the exact time the thief would come?
11. What are Luke warm Christians looking for?
12. Besides our love, what does God want from us?
13. Why should we not wait for salvation till tomorrow?
14. Who is the servant in verse 45?
15. What should the preacher do to prepare the people?
16. Who will be made ruler over the people?
17. What does the evil servant say?
18. What specific sin does he get into?
19. How is compromise coming in the church?
20. What is the beginning of knowledge?
21. We may witness to the lost, but what must we do?
22. If you sin in front of your weaker brother, what does it do to him?
23. Who can we not fool?

This lesson begins in Matthew 25:1 "Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom."

We know that the Lord is coming back for a church that is a chaste virgin. This means they have no other Gods. So we see by this, that all these girls were part of the church, because all ten were virgins. We know that the number ten has to do with world. All ten of them were in the world. It appears that they had light because they "took their lamps." We also see, that all ten were looking for Jesus ("...went forth to meet the bridegroom...").

Matthew 25:2 "And five of them were wise, and five [were] foolish." Matthew 25:3 "They that [were] foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them:" Matthew 25:4 "But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps."

Here, we see a division. Now remember, all ten were believers in Christ. It seems the extra oil that they took was what created a separation of the two. The Holy Spirit is the oil. It seems that the wise Christians had the Holy Spirit, and the foolish did not. We know over in Acts, that the disciples of Christ were instructed to go to the upper room and tarry until they be indued with power from on high. These same disciples, before they were baptized in the Holy Spirit, could not understand what the parables of Jesus meant. They were so weak, that one of them denied Jesus, and all but one of them ran when He was crucified. You can easily see that even though they had walked with the Light (Jesus), they had no power until they received power on Pentecost (when they received the power of the Holy Spirit). I believe that this was the secret of the ten virgins. The other five had the Holy Spirit (oil) which gave them power.

Matthew 25:5 "While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept." Matthew 25:6 "And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him."

This verse 5 doesn't speak too highly of the church. It shows a church that was asleep. All ten were asleep. I am sorry to say this a true description of the Spirit filled, as well as the salvation purchased churches today. You can hardly even tell that some of them are churches. They mostly are making people comfortable enough that they go to sleep (oblivious to the things going on). In the middle of this sleep of the church, the Lord comes back "midnight". It is midnight in most churches today. There are very few salvations, healings, true deliverances, or raising the spiritually dead. The churches, as a whole, have a form of godliness, but deny the power, as we read in second Timothy 3. There are a few exceptions, but not nearly enough. Some churches, for years, preached the return of Jesus. Now, they have despaired that He has not come, and they have gone to sleep. They are saying, well, if He is not coming, at least we can have a good time in the church. Now, their services are appealing to the flesh rather than building up the Spirit.



Matthew 25:7 "Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps." Matthew 25:8 "And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out."

Here too, is a sad situation describing of the falling away in the church. Their light (Jesus) had gone out of their lives. They had gotten caught up in the world and overlooked the more important thing of walking daily in their salvation. When they saw the coming of Christ, they hurriedly wanted to get back in good standing with their Lord. They wanted to meet the bridegroom (Jesus) because of their association (membership) with the righteous. The five foolish wanted to hang on to the coat-tails of the five wise. It was too late.

Matthew 25:9 "But the wise answered, saying, [Not so]; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves."

Salvation is an individual thing. Even if we wanted to, we could not share our salvation or Holy Spirit with anyone else. We can tell them where to get it, and how to get it, but they must get it for themselves.

Matthew 25:10 "And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut."

When the trumpet blows in the sky, those who have been expecting Him, and have lived their lives accordingly, will enter in with the Lord. There is just one call. If you do not make the call, the door will be shut. What a sad thing. Many churches teach salvation, but do not teach their people that they must walk in that salvation every day. The only way that it is possible to walk in our salvation daily is through the power of the Holy Spirit of God.

Matthew 25:11 "Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us." Matthew 25:12 "But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not."

This is the same cry that we read about in a few lessons back, when they stood before Jesus and said, Lord, Lord, have I not cast out demons, healed the sick, (etc). He said get away from me; I never knew you. You see, it is very dangerous to have a form of religion without having a love relation to the Lord Jesus. He not only wants to be our Saviour, but He wants to be our Lord, if we are His. Not some watered down religion of "dos and dont's", but a true love relation with Him. He must be everything to us. We should be happy as any bride who is waiting for her Groom.

Matthew 25:13 "Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh."

This "watch" just means to stay on your toes and don't be caught up with others whose relation with God has waned away. The Christians will be able to recognize the signs and know that His second coming is near, but no one knows the exact day or hour. We just need to live in anticipation of His coming.

Lets take one more quick look at all of this before we go on. All ten of these virgins are symbolic of people who proclaim to be Christians in this world. What is wrong? He (Jesus) is coming back for a church that is without spot or wrinkle. Where is this bride without spot or wrinkle to be found? There is such an irreverence in Church today that if Jesus was to visit, the first thing He would do, is clean house. He did that with the money changers and the dove sellers once before, because they were defaming the temple. Jesus explained to them then that the church is a House of Prayer. First of all you cannot purchase the Spirit. No one can teach you the things of God. The Holy things of God are an out-pouring from Him. Some minister can pray, lay hands on you, and you receive from God, the Holy Spirit. If you have to repeat what someone else has received from God, that is their gift from God, not yours. If you desire the Holy Spirit truly, He (God) will give it to you. It will be yours and yours alone. On the day of Pentecost, each person was filled individually. Acts 2:1 "And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place." Acts 2:2 "And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting." Acts 2:3 "And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them."

There were different languages spoken that day, as we read in Acts 2:6 "Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language." You see, God knows every language in the world. Things of God do not have to be taught {just received}.

One more statement before we close this lesson. Search the Scriptures daily for yourself. Pray and ask the Holy Spirit to teach you. Get in a good "Bible believing" Bible study and make the study of your Bible part of your daily living. God is easily found by those who diligently seek Him. Ask God to baptize you in the Holy Spirit and walk in the Light, every day until Jesus appears in the sky to call us to Him.

Next lesson will begin in Matthew 25:14

## Matthew 51 Questions

1. In this parable, what is the kingdom of heaven likened to?
2. What does "virgin" indicate here?
3. What does the fact that there were "ten" indicate?
4. What do the "lamps" indicate?
5. Who is the bridegroom?
6. What kind of a church is the Lord coming for?
7. How many were wise?
8. Why were the others classified as foolish?
9. What does the "oil" symbolize?
10. Why were the disciples to wait in the upper room until they were baptized in the Holy Spirit?
11. What weaknesses did they have before they received the Holy Spirit?
12. What did these virgins do while the bridegroom tarried?
13. What time did He come?
14. Why does this not speak too highly of the church?
15. What description in Second Timothy 3 describes most churches today?
16. What are churches doing today instead of building the spirit?
17. What did the virgins do as soon as they knew the bridegroom was here?
18. What did the foolish ask the wise for?
19. What did the wise tell them to do?
20. Explain salvation.
21. When the five foolish went to buy, who came?
22. Who went with Him?
23. What happened next?
24. What is the only way we can walk in our salvation every day?
25. What did the five foolish cry out to Jesus?
26. Who else have we heard cry this?
27. What two things will the believer not know about His coming?
28. If Jesus were to visit our churches today in person, what would He do with most of them?
29. On the day of Pentecost, how were they filled?
30. Who did the cloven tongues of fire sit on?
31. How did every man from all these different countries hear them?
32. What are four things we should practice to be ready?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 25:14 "For [the kingdom of heaven is] as a man travelling into a far country, [who] called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods."

Here, the master is going on a trip and He had called his servants together to take care of the kingdom until he returned. You see, Jesus has gone away into heaven, and is now sitting at the right hand of God. He has left His church in the care of His ministers (servants) until He returns.

Matthew 25:15 "And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey."

The very first thing that we must note about this, is that they were given talents according to their ability to handle money. Some people cannot handle large sums of money. God cannot trust some people with money. God knows where their ability lies. The problem is not to have money, the problem lies in what you do with it. This Scripture is not only in having money, but in the spiritual sense, is speaking of the congregations of the people God entrusts to the pastors. Some have large congregations, some medium, some have very few.

Matthew 25:16 "Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made [them] other five talents." Matthew 25:17 "And likewise he that [had received] two, he also gained other two." Matthew 25:18 "But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money."

The original word that this "talent" was taken from, means a sum of money. A talent was the largest weight mentioned in money of the Hebrews. Whether it was gold or silver, even one talent was a goodly sum of money. The fellow who received the five talents had enough faith, that he went and made another five talents to go with the five that he had been entrusted with. The same happened to the one who had received two. He doubled his, also. Any master in the world would be pleased with these two servants. They were not fearful. Fear is not of God. They had faith, and did what they had, probably, already been doing when their master was handling the money; and so, they increased what the master had entrusted them with. The servant, who received just one talent, had, probably, already shown his master that he was fearful and had no faith.

This money hidden in the ground was of no use to anyone. Just as it is today. For God to be pleased about our finances, we must be using them to gain for Him. We must not hoard them up just for ourselves. Riches are to be used not abused. If you are blessed of God and have a little more than your neighbor, you must be quick to distribute as we read in I Timothy 6:17 "Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;" I Timothy 6:18 "That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate;" I Timothy 6:19

"Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life."

You see, it is not the riches that are evil. It is our attitude toward the riches and what we do with them.

Matthew 25:19 "After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them." Matthew 25:20 "And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more." Matthew 25:21 "His lord said unto him, Well done, [thou] good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord."

You see, we all know it has been a long time since our Master came and checked on us, close to 2,000 years. There is going to be a day of reckoning. A day will come when we and our works will be judged of Jesus. Just the fact that we belong to Him will get us into heaven. Our faithfulness to the task that He has left us to do will determine what we will do when we reign with Him here on earth.

Life is pretty much like a monopoly game. Some people get Baltic and Mediterranean, and others get Boardwalk and Park Place. You can be a winner just as easily with Baltic, as you can with Boardwalk. It is how you play the game that is important.

These men trusted God and worked, and tried, and they were rewarded for their faithfulness and hard work. God is a rewarder of those who seek to please Him.

Matthew 25:22 "He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them." Matthew 25:23 "His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord."

Notice, here, that his lord was just as pleased with his four as he was with the other servants ten. To whom much is given, much is required. His faith was just as great as the other servant, he just had less to work with. The reward was the same, because he had worked hard and was faithful and did what he could do with what he had been entrusted with. You see, again, this servant was not concerned with the fact that the other servant had more than he did. He just did his best with what he had. His Lord was pleased the same as God will be pleased with us, if we do the very best we can with what we have to work with (through faith). It is just like this Bible study, there are many who could do a better job writing it, but I am willing to write it. God will help me, because of my willingness to do the best I can.

Matthew 25:24 "Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:" Matthew 25:25 "And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, [there] thou hast [that is] thine." Matthew 25:26 "His lord answered

and said unto him, [Thou] wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed:" Matthew 25:27 "Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and [then] at my coming I should have received mine own with usury." Matthew 25:28 "Take therefore the talent from him, and give [it] unto him which hath ten talents."

The Lord of this servant was very angry with him. He called him just what he was, wicked and lazy. When the Lord comes back, He wants to find us working for him. These people that say God has told them not to do anything, are in for a wide awakening. The Bible says no work no eat, II Thess. 3:10. Also, Hebrews 6:12 "That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises." Work never hurt anyone. When Jesus comes back, we must be found working, not sitting around wringing our hands in fear. Some are so afraid they will do something wrong, that they are not doing anything at all. FEAR IS NOT OF GOD.

In the story above, this man's lord told him that it did no good hidden in the ground. If nothing else, he could have drawn interest on it at the bank. The man was not trustworthy, so his lord took this talent from him and gave it to someone who put it to use. Now, the five talent man had eleven, because of his faithfulness.

Matthew 25:29 "For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath." Matthew 25:30 "And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

You see, poverty does not insure you that you will go to heaven. Neither does the fact that you have money insure you that you will go to hell. Many believe just this. The parable of the talents prove how much in error this is. It not how much you have that counts; it is what you do with what you have. God has no respect for the faithless. Faith in Jesus Christ is what saves us. Without faith, it is impossible to please God. You can easily see what happens to those who have no faith in the 30th verse above. They are cast into hell; the place of torment.

What can we retain from all of this?

- #1. Have faith in God.
- #2. Use whatever God has entrusted to you to the very best of your ability. Do whatever you do in His will.
- #3. Do not be lazy. Do what you can.
- #4. There will be great rewards for those who have faith in God and work to bring others into the kingdom of God.

We will begin the next lesson with verse 31.

## Matthew 52 Questions

1. In this parable, what is the kingdom of heaven likened unto?
2. When the man left, who did he leave his goods with?
3. Compare this to the Christians?
4. How many talents did he give each servant?
5. Why did he give them different amounts?
6. The problem with money is not having it, but in what?
7. From a spiritual standpoint, what is another message here?
8. What did the servant do that had five talents?
9. What did the servant that had two do?
10. What does "talent" mean?
11. Why would their master be pleased?
12. For God to be pleased with our finances (whatever they are), what must we be doing with them?
13. What is a requirement, if we have been blessed with money, if we intend to please God? Four things.
14. What makes having money evil?
15. What did the lord of these servants say to the one with the five talents and to the one with two talents?
16. Just our faith in Jesus will get us to heaven, but what will determine what we will do when we reign with Him?
17. What game is life very similar to?
18. What difference was made between the man with ten and the man with four talents?
19. What description of the lord did the man with one talent give?
20. What did the man with one talent do with it?
21. What description did his lord have of him? Two things.
22. What did his lord say the least thing he could have done was?
23. What did his lord do with his one talent?
24. Where did he cast this unfaithful servant?
25. What mistaken information do many have about poverty? About being rich?
26. It is not how much you have, but what you \_\_\_\_\_ .
27. Without what, it is impossible to please God?
28. What four things should we retain from all of this?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 25:31 "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:"

This Scripture is speaking of Jesus' return to the earth when He will be King of kings and Lord of Lords. He will rule with an iron hand.

Matthew 25:32 "And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth [his] sheep from the goats:" Matthew 25:33 "And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left."

Jesus is Judge of the earth. Every individual shall stand before Jesus to be judged. There are only two kinds of people; the saved and the lost. The sheep belong to God, and the goats belong to Satan. The right hand side is for God's people, and the left is Satan's side.

Matthew 25:34 "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:"

Jesus, in this verse, calls Himself "King" for the very first time. That will be His title when He returns to the earth. Messiah, Jesus, Lord, Word, now King. He is inviting the saved to come and reign with Him. We, Christians, will be joint-heirs with Jesus.

You see, God did not predestinate us to be saved, but God knew (had foreknowledge) that we would accept the grace that Jesus provided us. This kingdom has truly been prepared from the foundation of the world. God knew that we would be saved even then. Again, I say that this is not predestination, but foreknowledge.

You hear so much today in politics about the far left or the far right. That too, is speaking of the moral fiber of a person more than the literal right hand. The right hand blessing throughout the Bible was the one to be desired. Jesus sits at the right hand of God the Father in heaven; in fact, He is the Right Hand of God.

Matthew 25:35 "For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:" Matthew 25:36 "Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me." Matthew 25:37 "Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed [thee]? or thirsty, and gave [thee] drink?" Matthew 25:38 "When saw we thee a stranger, and took [thee] in? or naked, and clothed [thee]?" Matthew 25:39 "Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?"

These are valid questions. They had never literally fed Jesus, or visited Him, or given Him water to drink, or clothed Him. They could not understand what Jesus was saying, because they could only think of literally doing these things for Jesus.



Matthew 25:40 "And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done [it] unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done [it] unto me."

You see, when we do anything to help someone else, Jesus counts it as we doing these things for Him. We cannot directly do these things for Him, but every thing, regardless of how small it is, that we do for our fellowmen is counted as being done for Jesus. God really smiles on those who helps women and children who cannot help themselves. We read love your neighbor as yourself. This is not a principle that the world understands. But besides getting a reward stored up in heaven for the good things we do, doing good makes you feel good about yourself.

Matthew 25:41 "Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:"

As I said before, there are only two destinies that we can choose from. The right leads to heaven, and the wrong (left) leads to hell. Hell has been prepared from the foundation of the world, as well. God does not want anyone to go there, but He is just. If that is the choice one makes, that will be one's home for eternity. We make the choice. We cannot blame God. It is our choice to make. He just carries out our decisions.

Matthew 25:42 "For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink:" Matthew 25:43 "I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not." Matthew 25:44 "Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?"

You see, they, too, never saw Jesus in person, so they did not understand this statement. This is the picture of a very selfish person; someone who has no feeling for the infirmities of others. This person lives just for himself, not caring what destitute condition their neighbors are in. This person is caught up in self, and has gone so far as to make a God of himself alone. What a pitiful sight. Then in the next verse, Jesus told them of their error.

Matthew 25:45 "Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did [it] not to one of the least of these, ye did [it] not to me."

Of course, anyone who saw Jesus in person would do all these things for Him. Jesus was speaking, here, of the condition of this person's heart. The heart will be judged even more than the deeds, because it is actually what a person is. If someone in this kind of need cannot prick your heart, then you are definitely not right with God. We are responsible to help those who are before us, if they cannot help themselves. These are opportunities that come to see what we really are inside.

Matthew 25:46 "And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal."

You see, the things you do tell what you really are. This method that Jesus used to determine the ones in right standing with Him and the lost is a good one. This happened when this person thought none of the church group was watching, so he did not have to make it look good. The things that are done in secret will be made manifest, whether they be good or bad. Jesus knows without a doubt from this who should inherit eternal life, and who should be condemned to hell.

## Matthew 53 Questions

1. When shall Jesus sit on His throne here?
2. What will be His title then?
3. Who will be gathered before Him?
4. For what purpose are they gathered?
5. Which side are the sheep on? Which side are the goats on?
6. Who is the Judge of all the earth?
7. What shall the King say to those on the right?
8. How long has the preparation been made?
9. What is the King inviting the Christians to do?
10. Is the knowing of God predestination or foreknowledge?
11. Who sits at the right hand of the Father in heaven?
12. Who is the Right Hand of God?
13. Why do those on the right deserve heaven? Besides their faith, what did they do? Five things
14. Finish this; "Verily I say unto you, inasmuch ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done unto \_\_\_\_\_."
15. Besides getting a reward in heaven, what is great about helping others?
16. What does Jesus say to those on the left?
17. Who is responsible for us going to heaven or hell?
18. Those on the left neglected to do what?
19. What is this a picture of?
20. What will be judged more than our deeds?
21. Where do the righteous go forever?

This lesson begins in Matthew 26:1 "And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples," Matthew 26:2 "Ye know that after two days is [the feast of] the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified."

You see, the authorities coming to get Jesus and crucifying Him would be no surprise to Him. He was fully aware that He, Himself was the Passover Lamb for all believers. He had finished teaching the public. After His crucifixion and after He had risen from the grave, He would continue to teach His disciples. The feast of the passover was done in remembrance of a night long ago when the death angel came through the streets in Egypt to kill the firstborn in every family. The only ones who were spared were the Hebrews who killed a male lamb and put the blood over their door. Everyone in the house was spared when the blood was over their door. This passover had been celebrated on the fourteenth of Nisan, in remembrance that God had spared their lives so many years ago. Just as the lamb spared the Hebrew, Jesus, our passover Lamb, will save all believers from death. Jesus knew He was to be betrayed and even knew who it was that would betray Him. Jesus came into the world for this very purpose. He would not run. He would willingly go through all this for His own.

Matthew 26:3 "Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas," Matthew 26:4 "And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtlety, and kill [him]."

The very time that Jesus was telling the disciples about His coming crucifixion, the chief priests, scribes and elders were plotting trying to capture Jesus and kill Him. These chief priests, were of the Sanhedrin. This high priest, whose home they met in, was Caiaphas. He was really a "go between" for the Romans who had given him this job. They planned to get Him as quietly as possible and do away with Him the same way, so they would not start a fight with His followers.

Matthew 26:5 "But they said, Not on the feast [day], lest there be an uproar among the people."

The passover celebration actually lasted eight days, and many Galileans would be there. They were trying not to have a confrontation with Jesus' people.

Matthew 26:6 "Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper," Matthew 26:7 "There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat [at meat]."

Bethany was the home of Jesus' friends Mary, Martha, and Lazarus. This time Jesus was in Simon the leper's home. Probably, he had been one of the leper's that Jesus healed. This is not known for sure. Simon could have been a relative or close friend of Mary and Martha. It seems they were here in Simon's house. The woman spoken of here was Mary, the sister of Lazarus. St. John identified her as this Mary.

Why her name was omitted here we do not know. This "alabaster box" was used for expensive perfume or ointment. This "Ointment" which Mary poured on His head was like anointing. Mary loved Jesus, and this was no sacrifice to her. Mary, on several occasions, called Him Master.

Matthew 26:8 "But when his disciples saw [it], they had indignation, saying, To what purpose [is] this waste?" Matthew 26:9 "For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor."

In another book, it was mentioned that Judas complained. Of course, Judas was the one that carried the purse. This perfume was worth about 300 days' wages. Mary was a very a very wealthy woman and could well afford this. It was hers, and no one else really should have a say in what she was to do with it. This was her Lord, nothing was too good for Him. You hear so much today, even from the ones who usually give very little to God, that there is too much spent on beauty in the church and should be used to feed the poor. I wonder how God feels about that.

The tabernacle in the wilderness and the temple in Jerusalem were very expensive places of worship by Almighty God's directions. It is easy to take your place of worship too lightly. We truly must help the poor, but we must give into God's house, as well. Sometimes, I think the magnificence of a particular church makes you feel the greatness of God. We must not take God too lightly. Probably, Judas didn't really have the poor in mind at all, but in lining his own pocket.

Matthew 26:10 "When Jesus understood [it], he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me." Matthew 26:11 "For ye have the poor always with you; but me ye have not always." Matthew 26:12 "For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did [it] for my burial."

It seems as though the disciples still did not understand what was about to take place, even though Jesus had told them several times. Jesus took up for Mary and told the disciples to leave her alone. He told them one more time that He would not be with them very long in body form. Mary showed her reverence for Jesus' body. She had realized what Jesus had been telling them, and the disciples did not.

Matthew 26:13 "Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, [there] shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her."

Jesus was appreciative of this unselfish act of Mary's, and He told them that this pouring of this ointment on His head for burial would never be forgotten. It shall be remembered, and shall also be remembered who did this.

Matthew 26:14 "Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests," Matthew 26:15 "And said [unto them], What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver." Matthew 26:16 "And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him."

Here, we are told that Judas, one of the original twelve chosen by Jesus, would be the one who would betray Him. Probably, the reason Judas name was given, was so he would not be confused with another Judas who joined in with the disciples later and helped them.

Whether Judas was angry about the expensive perfume, and that prompted him to do this terrible thing, we are not told. Some believe that Judas was chosen of God for this task, and that he (Judas) had no choice. Whatever the reason, he did it. I believe that Judas' greed for money prompted this act. Greed is a terrible thing when it goes unchecked.

This agreement for 30 pieces of silver has a lot of spiritual significance. Thirty pieces of silver was the price of a male slave in his prime of life. Thirty also is 3 times ten. Three means God, and ten means world government. This is God dealing with the world to redeem His children. "Silver" means redemption. You can easily see the connection. It is one thing to oppose someone, but betrayal is a terrible thing to do.

We will take up the next lesson at Matthew 26:17.

## Matthew 54 Questions

1. How many days was it to passover when Jesus finished talking to the people and came to the disciples?
2. What two things did Jesus tell them would happen to Him?
3. Who is the passover Lamb for the believers?
4. What was passover in remembrance of?
5. When was it celebrated?
6. Who assembled together to plot a way to kill Jesus?
7. Who were these chief priests?
8. Why did they not want to do this on feast day?
9. How long did passover celebration last?
10. Whose house was Jesus in Bethany?
11. Who was the woman who poured ointment on Jesus?
12. What did the disciples say about this?
13. Were they really interested in the poor?
14. Who was the disciple who carried the purse?
15. About how much was the ointment worth?
16. What did Jesus say about Mary?
17. Why did Jesus say she poured the ointment on His head.
18. What did Jesus say about Mary?
19. Which disciple went to see the chief priests?
20. How much did the priests agree to pay Judas for Jesus?
21. Explain the spiritual meaning of the price.
22. Why did they give Judas' full name.

We will pick up this lesson with Matthew 26:17 "Now the first [day] of the [feast of] unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover?"

Jesus said over and over that He came not to do away with the law, but to fulfill it. He, also, observed the passover. The room where the passover was to be observed had to be prepared ahead. There was quite a cleansing that had to go on before the celebration to remove the leaven (sin).

Matthew 26:18 "And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples."

In Luke's writings, he said that Jesus sent Peter and John. The "where" was Jerusalem. The place, that is said to be the place of the passover feast in Jerusalem today, is still a magnificent building. If this truly was the home of the man, this had to be a very wealthy man. The upper room is unbelievably preserved. The secrecy involved, perhaps, was to keep Judas from knowing ahead of time where Jesus was. Some believe that this is just a man on the street that Jesus had invisioned, and that they, Peter and John, just followed him and made arrangements for the celebration.

My own personal belief is that God had, either in a dream or a visit from an angel, prepared this man to accept Jesus and His disciples at this special time.

"My time is at hand" just mean the crucifixion of Jesus was near. At this passover, Jesus was the sacrificial Lamb. There is no mention of a lamb being served at this meal with the disciples. The lamb could not be killed until the fourteenth. This was actually a remembrance of Jesus. The Lamb the disciples ate, was when Jesus told them "This is my body" "This is my blood" speaking of the bread and wine which symbolized His body and blood. This, commonly called "The Last Supper", was with just His twelve; not even the master of the house dined with them. This large upper room is believed to be the same room where over fifty days later these same disciples (except for Judas) would come for the infilling of the Holy Spirit of God. The group would have grown to 120, but this room was plenty large to accommodate that many.

Matthew 26:19 "And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready the passover." Matthew 26:20 "Now when the even was come, he sat down with the twelve." Matthew 26:21 "And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me."

The thing that stands out to me over and over, and this alone should have told the disciples who Jesus was, is that there was no hassle in finding the man to whom Jesus sent them and the ease of finding the room. This meal of bread, wine, and bitter herbs was to be Jesus' last meal with the disciples before His crucifixion. Here again, Jesus was speaking prophetically when He said that there was one



of His own who would betray Him. Remember now, Jesus knew exactly what would befall Him in Jerusalem, but He came anyhow. He knew what His mission was, and He is willing to perform it. Don't you know how this saddened the disciples?

Matthew 26:22 "And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?" Matthew 26:23 "And he answered and said, He that dippeth [his] hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me." Matthew 26:24 "The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born."

It is almost as if each disciple began to question Himself. Jesus really did not tell them who it was, When He said one who dipped with Him, because they all did. Of course, Judas knew who it was. There are so many schools of thought on Judas. I personally believe that Judas fell to the desire of the flesh. Judas loved money more than anything else, even more than He loved Jesus. I believe Judas was a free agent of his own will, the same as we are. The reason Jesus knew who it would be, was because Jesus, as well as the Father, had foreknowledge of what Jesus would do. Jesus was looking ahead to Judas' killing himself and all of eternity, when He said, it would have been better had he not been born.

Matthew 26:25 "Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said."

Judas, probably, had not asked Jesus before; He was, probably, afraid Jesus might expose him to the others. In the answer Jesus gave, He did not just say, yes it is you. The rest of the disciples would have suddenly realized if He had said that, but He answered in such a way that Judas alone would be aware that He knew.

Matthew 26:26 "And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed [it], and brake [it], and gave [it] to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body."

Jesus is the Bread of life. When He took this bread and blessed it, it was like a wave offering. This bread had to be unleavened bread, free of sin to symbolize the body of the Passover Lamb. This unleavened bread, we call Matzah, is full of holes and stripes. The stripes are symbolic for them whipping Jesus. The shewbread in the Temple was symbolic of Jesus, and so was the bread (Manna) which fell from heaven. Jesus was born in Bethlehem (house of Bread) He was and is the Bread of life. Without Him, there is no life. this must have been a shock to the disciples, for at this time, they had not been filled with the Holy Spirit and did not truly discern His body.

Matthew 26:27 "And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave [it] to them, saying, Drink ye all of it;" Matthew 26:28 "For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins."

The word "remission" is interesting, it means freed from or pardon. You see, we were bound down by sin, until we accept the sacrifice of Jesus' blood which freed us from sin. This cup that Jesus raised was, probably, the

most important part of salvation, for without the shedding of blood, there is no remission.

"New Testament" is an interesting statement, as well. This is the last will and testament of Jesus Christ, and we are the heirs or beneficiaries. Jesus purchased our salvation, healing, happiness and very lives with His shed blood. We should never take the communion cup lightly. We must take it reverently with a pure heart, remembering His great sacrifice. We must never take it with hate for our brother in our hearts, or we might become sick or even die. This cup taken properly with a pure heart can bring many blessings of God. This blood was shed for whosoever will. It is offered universally to old and young, rich and poor, male and female.

I Corinthians chapter 11 verses 24 thru 31, I Corinthians 11:24 "And when he had given thanks, he brake [it], and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me." I Corinthians 11:25 "After the same manner also [he took] the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink [it], in remembrance of me." I Corinthians 11:26 "For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come." I Corinthians 11:27 "Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink [this] cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord." I Corinthians 11:28 "But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of [that] bread, and drink of [that] cup." I Corinthians 11:29 "For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body." I Corinthians 11:30 "For this cause many [are] weak and sickly among you, and many sleep." I Corinthians 11:31 "For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged."

Matthew 26:29 "But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom."

Jesus was telling them of His close departure from the earth. Here, He was speaking of the future marriage supper of the Lamb, in the Father's kingdom.

Matthew 26:30 "And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives."

The mount of Olives was Jesus' favorite place to go and commune with God. The garden of Gethsemane is on the mount of Olives.

## Matthew 55 Questions

1. When did the disciples come to Jesus and ask where they would celebrate passover?
2. Jesus came, not to do away with the law but to \_\_\_\_\_ it.
3. Why was it necessary for them to clean up for passover?
4. How could the disciples find the place for passover?
5. What name did Jesus call Himself here?
6. Who would celebrate with Jesus?
7. St. Luke said what two disciples went to get the room?
8. What city was this in?
9. What can we learn about this man by his house?
10. Why were they secretive about where it should be held?
11. What does "my time is at hand" mean?
12. Who was the sacrificial Lamb for this passover?
13. What would this room be used again for fifty days after resurrection?
14. In verse 21, what bad news did Jesus give the twelve?
15. In reply to this, what did the disciples ask Jesus?
16. What statement was made of Judas when Jesus spoke the woe on him?
17. The author's personal belief is that Judas fell to what?
18. When did Jesus take bread and break it?
19. What did Jesus say the Bread was?
20. What did the wine symbolize?
21. What are three symbolic things we find in Matzah? Explain.
22. Why was Jesus' blood shed?
23. What is the New Testament?
24. When a person takes communion unworthily, what is he guilty of?
25. What are two things that might happen to you, if you take communion unworthily?
26. When Jesus said He would not drink the cup again until His Father's kingdom, what does it mean?
27. What did they do last before they went to mount Olives?
28. What garden was located on the mount of Olives?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 26:31 "Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad."

This is an interesting Scripture. Judas was not now with them, he had already gone to do his deceptive work. Jesus was speaking to the remaining eleven. He told them that for a time they, too, would lose their faith and some would sin. Jesus is the Shepherd. The Shepherd leads His sheep. When the Shepherd is not there to lead them, the sheep scatter. Fear would grip the disciples and cause them to flee as we see in V-56.

Matthew 26:32 "But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee."

Jesus continued to promise that He would rise again. The disciples seemed to just ignore this, or else they did not believe Him. He was even telling them that He would come to them in Galilee.

Matthew 26:33 "Peter answered and said unto him, Though all [men] shall be offended because of thee, [yet] will I never be offended."

Peter was brave at this point, because Jesus had not yet been taken by the authorities. Pretty soon he would be put to the test. We will see in the face of death, and a cruel death at that, if he would still feel as brave. Peter was saying in essence, they may all run, but I won't.

Matthew 26:34 "Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice."

Jesus again had foreknowledge of Peter and his actions when he was frightened. He said, Peter, you will not only deny me, but it will be tonight, and you won't deny me once, but three times.

Matthew 26:35 "Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples."

When Jesus had spoken of the denial, Peter knew that the desire of his heart was to stand with Jesus. He said over again, I will not fail you; I will stand, and he had every intention of doing just that. It would not be many hours until this would be tested.

Matthew 26:36 "Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder."

When we were in Isreal in 1979 on tour, we saw a large hewn out stone which was used for an olive press. To my amazement when I asked the guide what this was, he said it was a Gethsemane. My heart leapt within me, because olive oil is symbolic of the Holy Spirit. Jesus, while He was housed in His body here on the earth, from time to time

went aside to pray to the Father. He wanted to be alone with the Father, so He asked the disciples to wait at the bottom of the hill.

Matthew 26:37 "And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy." Matthew 26:38 "Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me."

Jesus again, had taken Peter, James and John with Him. They were carried closer to where He would go and pray than the others, but they did not go all the way. Jesus was living in a body of flesh, and He would feel pain as any other person; so this was a sorrowful time. What He was really asking these three to do was to pray and watch with Him. John was John the beloved. He loved Jesus so dearly. Peter and James had been with Jesus on so many special occasions, and they, too, loved Jesus. These three seemed to have a special closeness with Him.

Matthew 26:39 "And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou [wilt]."

Jesus was not looking forward to the pain and humiliation of the cross. He was in the flesh and knew there would be great pain involved in this type of death; but I believe more than the pain, He dreaded becoming sin itself and having the Father turn His back to Him, if even for a moment. You see, He (Jesus) would take on the sin of the entire world, so that sin and death might be destroyed.

Matthew 26:40 "And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?"

This was very disappointing to Jesus. These three trusted disciples, after Jesus had asked them to watch and wait, had gone to sleep. Some of the writers think because they were grief stricken of the things Jesus had told them, that they had just given up. One thing in their favor, this was before they received the Holy Ghost and power. The flesh part of Jesus needed their caring. What a time to let Him down. Peter had just bragged that he never would. I do not know whether the hour was a real hour, or just a span of time. At any rate, these three disciples' human weakness was showing.

Matthew 26:41 "Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed [is] willing, but the flesh [is] weak."

The spirit, as we have said so many times, came from the Holy Spirit and is strong. The flesh was provided by Mary who was human as you and I. As God, He knew the needs of the people and was willing to go through with this terrible death to save the world. Jesus' flesh did not look forward to the pain and humiliation as we said before. I believe Jesus went to the garden of Gethsemane (Holy Spirit) to strengthen His flesh.

Matthew 26:42 "He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done."

This second prayer of Jesus, tells me that it is ok to pray more than once about the same thing. Jesus is our example.

Matthew 26:43 "And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy." Matthew 26:44 "And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words."

We see here again, that Jesus returned to the Father a third time. Jesus surely felt left alone by His earthly friends and companions. They (Peter, James, and John) did not feel the urgency that Jesus did, because, really, they had no idea what was about to take place. They were exhausted after the recent activities, even though it was not their desire to sleep, they did anyhow.

Matthew 26:45 "Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take [your] rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners."

Here we see that Jesus had lined up His will with the Father's will. There was no more need for prayer. It was settled. Jesus knew that even though the Father did not remove the cup, He (the Father) would be with Him to strengthen Him. When we are sure something is the will of the Father, it is easier to bear. Jesus was fully aware of the urgency of the hour. He knew that Judas was on his way with Roman soldiers and people from the town to apprehend Him. He had prayed through, and He was ready.

Matthew 26:46 "Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me."

There certainly was an interval of time between V-45 and V-46, Jesus was awakening them. Judas and the Roman soldiers with him were approaching. Jesus, James, John, and Peter went to the entrance of the garden, where they left the other eight, that they might confront Judas' group there.

In the next lesson, we will study the betrayal.

## Matthew 56 Questions

1. How many of His disciples did Jesus say would be offended that night?
2. When the Shepherd is smitten, what happens to the sheep?
3. How many disciples were still with Jesus?
4. What was Jesus really saying would happen to them?
5. What province would Jesus go into after He had risen?
6. What encouragement was Jesus still giving the disciples?
7. Which disciple quickly said even if the others be offended, he would not?
8. What was Jesus' answer to him?
9. He said though I should \_\_\_\_\_, yet I will not deny the.
10. Jesus went to what garden with His eleven disciples?
11. What did He tell them to do while He prayed?
12. What is the proper name for an olive press?
13. What three disciples did Jesus take part way with Him?
14. What two things did He ask them to do?
15. Why was He sorrowful?
16. What did Jesus say in His prayer?
17. More than the pain, what did Jesus dread?
18. When He came back from the three disciples, what were they doing?
19. What did Jesus tell them to watch and pray for?
20. By Jesus praying more than once, what does this tell us?
21. When Jesus came back to the disciples the third time, what did He say to them?
22. Who is the Son of man betrayed into the hands of?
23. What help us bear up to problems?
24. Why did Jesus tell them to rise?
25. Who was coming with Judas after Jesus?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 26:47 "And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people."

In this lesson, we saw Jesus praying to the Father and then going to the entrance of the garden of Gethsemane to be there when Judas came. From these that came and the weapons that they brought, you would think that they had come out for a criminal. Isn't it a shame that the religious (chief priest and scribes) were involved in this?

Matthew 26:48 "Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he: hold him fast."

In this part of the world, it was not unusual to greet someone that you had great respect for with a kiss. Whether Judas did this as a cover up to the other disciples of what treacherous thing he had planned, or not, we do not know. This kiss was the kiss of death. It was dark, and they might not recognize Him at night. At any rate, even if these who came to get Jesus had never seen Him before, Judas would point Him out to them by kissing Him.

Matthew 26:49 "And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, master; and kissed him."

He had the audacity to call Him master and betray Him at the very same moment.

Matthew 26:50 "And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him."

Jesus was fully aware of why Judas was there. This statement was made for Judas. Jesus was saying, some friend you are. This was the signal, and the soldiers took Jesus into custody.

Matthew 26:51 "And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus stretched out [his] hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest's, and smote off his ear."

This was Peter. He was rather impulsive, and he was ready to fight to keep them from taking Jesus. The servant's name whose ear was cut off was Malchus. Peter, probably, had not aimed for his ear, but his head and missed. Jesus put his ear back on and healed it.

Matthew 26:52 "Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword."

Violence and revenge were not what Jesus taught.

Matthew 26:53 "Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?"  
Matthew 26:54 "But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that



thus it must be?"

I sing a song called "Then Thousand Angels" which speaks of Jesus willingly going to the cross, when any moment He could have called ten thousand angels to destroy the world and set Him free. The truth really is that Jesus was in control at all times. He did not even need the angels. They did not really take Him, He went willingly. Jesus was in control of His own destiny. He did not want to destroy the world. He chose to save it instead. He would fulfill all the Scriptures by dying on the cross for the sin of the world. They did not take His life, He gave it.

Matthew 26:55 "In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me." Matthew 26:56 "But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled."

In this, Jesus was willing to go with them, but did not enjoy being treated as a criminal. He said, if you wanted to arrest me, I was in your temple everyday, why didn't you take me then? Of course, Jesus knew why they did not take Him. It would not have filled the Scriptures of Him being the Lamb. Jesus must be killed at passover time. He must be buried and rise again on first fruits.

Matthew 26:57 "And they that had laid hold on Jesus led [him] away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled."

For political reasons, Caiaphas had asked the death of Jesus. These scribes and Pharisees wanted His death, as well.

Matthew 26:58 "But Peter followed him afar off unto the high priest's palace, and went in, and sat with the servants, to see the end."

Peter had not completely run away. He was still nearby. He was in the city to see what happened to Jesus. Peter was, possibly, disappointed that Jesus would not let him fight for Him. John would join Peter at Caiaphas' headquarters.

Matthew 26:59 "Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to death;" Matthew 26:60 "But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, [yet] found they none. At the last came two false witnesses," Matthew 26:61 "And said, This [fellow] said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days."

It seems that most of these chief priests and elders were really not intrusted with the truth. They just wanted to get rid of Jesus. They were even willing to hire false witnesses to produce enough false evidence to get the Romans to pronounce sentence on Him. At first they could not find witnesses to testify against Jesus, and then they finally found two. By their law two witnesses were enough witnesses to convict Him. The Bible, itself, says by two witnesses a thing can be

established. They did not understand that the temple that Jesus had spoken of was His body.

Matthew 26:62 "And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what [is it which] these witness against thee?"

Caiaphas was trying to make Jesus say something that could be used against Him. He was trying to get Jesus to accuse the witnesses of lying.

Matthew 26:63 "But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God."

Here, the high priest changed to an entirely different subject. This was the real reason Jesus had been brought before Caiaphas. Here, if Jesus said He was the Christ the Son of God, then they would shout blasphemy, and say that they should kill Him. If He said He wasn't, then they would ask by what authority had He been preaching and healing.

Matthew 26:64 "Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven."

Jesus said to him, you said it. Jesus went even further and said He would be sitting at the right hand of God. Jesus, also, told him that He would come back in the clouds of heaven. This left no doubt. Jesus had let Caiaphas know beyond a shadow of a doubt that He (Jesus) was the only begotten of the Father. The Messiah!

Matthew 26:65 "Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy." Matthew 26:66 "What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death." Matthew 26:67 "Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote [him] with the palms of their hands," Matthew 26:68 "Saying, Prophecy unto us, thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee?"

The high priest, probably, thought he was right in turning against Jesus. Maybe, he really did believe that this was blasphemy. They would never have spit on Jesus and slapped Him, had they known that what He said was true. "Christ" means the Anointed One. Someday they would rue the day they did this.

Matthew 26:69 "Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee." Matthew 26:70 "But he denied before [them] all, saying, I know not what thou sayest." Matthew 26:71 "And when he was gone out into the porch, another [maid] saw him, and said unto them that were there, This [fellow] was also with Jesus of Nazareth." Matthew 26:72 "And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man." Matthew 26:73 "And after a while came unto [him] they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art [one] of them; for thy speech bewrayeth thee." Matthew 26:74 "Then began he to curse and to swear, [saying], I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew." Matthew 26:75 "And Peter

remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly."

These three denials that had been prophesied by Jesus were progressive in nature. First Peter just denied, the second time he added an oath, and the third time Peter added cursing. How sad when the cock crows, and Peter realized what he had done; and worse, who Jesus really was. God the Son, Christ, Messiah.

## Matthew 57 Questions

1. Who came with Judas to get Jesus?
2. Who sent them?
3. What did they bring with them?
4. What was the sign Judas had given them?
5. What did Judas call Jesus?
6. What did Jesus call Judas?
7. What did Peter do to Malchus?
8. What did Jesus say to Peter?
9. What miracle did Jesus do?
10. If Jesus prayed to the Father, how many angels would come?
11. Jesus could destroy the world, but what did He want to do instead?
12. Where was Jesus daily?
13. Why did they capture Him then?
14. What happened to the disciples?
15. What caused them to do this?
16. To fulfill the Scripture, when must Jesus die?
17. When must we rise again?
18. What was the name of the high priest?
19. Which disciple followed at a distance?
20. How many false witnesses did they finally get?
21. What did they say Jesus said?
22. What temple was Jesus speaking of?
23. By how many witnesses is something established?
24. The high priest asked Jesus to tell him if He was \_\_\_\_\_ .
25. How did Jesus answer?
26. What did the high priest do after Jesus answered?
27. What three humiliating things did they do to Jesus?
28. How many accused Peter of knowing Jesus?
29. Explain how Peter's answers progressed into worse sin?
30. When the cock crew, what did Peter do?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 27:1 "When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death:" Matthew 27:2 "And when they had bound him, they led [him] away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor."

They had already decided to kill Jesus. This is not just one person, but the general council. This was the beginning of Friday, the fourteenth day of Nisan. We call it good Friday. This was passover and Jesus was the Passover Lamb, so He must be killed today to fulfill the Scriptures. They had made their decision, and now they had bound Him and led Him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

Matthew 27:3 "Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders," Matthew 27:4 "Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What [is that] to us? see thou [to that]."

Suddenly, Judas felt remorse when he saw that they had condemned Jesus to die. His greed for money had caused him to do this terrible thing, but he had never dreamed that they would kill Him. He, probably, did not even consider what they would do to Jesus. Here, we see someone who had done a terrible sin, who had repented. This Judas had repented to the extent that he would repay the blood money. Whether Judas was forgiven of God or not was between him and God. I have learned a long time ago, that what Jesus decides to do with people on judgement day is none of my business.

Matthew 27:5 "And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself."

We read in the Bible in Galatians 3:13 "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed [is] every one that hangeth on a tree:"

Here, we see Judas, who hangeth on a tree. Probably, Judas was making a statement about how evil he felt he was, when he did this. He no longer wanted this silver and threw it on the temple floor.

Matthew 27:6 "And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood."

This one statement should tell us something about not accepting every offering in the church. If the church knows for sure that it is an ill gotten gain, they should not accept the offering. Look at Deut. 23:18. You cannot cover up a sin with money. A repentant heart is the only thing that God will accept.

Matthew 27:7 "And they took counsel, and bought with them the Potter's field, to bury strangers in." Matthew 27:8 "Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day." Matthew 27:9

"Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value;" Matthew 27:10 "And gave them for the Potter's field, as the Lord appointed me."

The 30 pieces of silver, as we said before, was the price of a young male slave. It, also, had the symbolic meaning of God redeeming us from world government. Three times ten; plus silver. (Three-God; ten world government; silver redemption). This detail of the betrayal is very important. It shows the "men of God" had no problem convicting Jesus, with really no evidence, and condemning Him to death. However, they were sticking to the letter of the law; they would not use blood money to purchase anything for the church. Jesus had rightly accused them when He said they swallow a camel and strain at a gnat, ye hypocrites.

Matthew 27:11 "And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest."

I do not believe that Pontius Pilate meant this in a way that would trap Jesus. I believe he truly wanted to know if Jesus truly was the king of the Jews. Jesus, here again, did not give him an answer that would settle the matter. He just said, you say I am.

Matthew 27:12 "And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing." Matthew 27:13 "Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee?" Matthew 27:14 "And he answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly."

Jesus would not defend Himself. Just one word from Jesus and all of this would stop, but He was determined to carry it through. Criminals who were brought before the governor, and knew their terrible fate would be a cruel death on the cross, would be begging for mercy about now; but Jesus never said a word. No wonder Pilate marvelled.

Matthew 27:15 "Now at [that] feast the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would." Matthew 27:16 "And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas." Matthew 27:17 "Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?" Matthew 27:18 "For he knew that for envy they had delivered him."

It appears very clear to me that Pilate wanted to release Jesus. Pilate could not understand why his people would want to kill this innocent man. Since it was a custom to release a prisoner at passover, what better prisoner to release than Jesus? Pilate even reminded the people that Jesus was called Christ (the Anointed One). Barabbas on the other hand, fully deserved to be in prison. His crimes were many and terrible. He was a menace to society. I believe Pilate's reason for choosing Barabbas was because he was so bad, and Pilate just knew the people would not want him released. Therefore, Pilate would get his

wish and release Jesus. Jealousy and envy had driven these so called "religious" men to seek the death of Jesus.

Matthew 27:19 "When he was set down on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him."

Here, we see a dream from God given to Pilate's wife. God speaks to us many times in dreams. Not every dream has a message for us in it, but many times dreams are a warning to us of impending danger. Sometimes dreams are to encourage us. We certainly should heed messages that we get from God in dreams. Here too, we see that God speaks to women, as well as men. She sent a message to her husband to warn him. Some women would have been afraid that he would laugh at them, and would not have sent the message. This woman had done what God intended her to do. Now, her husband had to heed the message.

Matthew 27:20 "But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus."

These chief priests were so determined to kill Jesus, that they would go to any lengths to see this done, even to release this terrible criminal.

Matthew 27:21 "The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas." Matthew 27:22 "Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ? [They] all say unto him, Let him be crucified."

Pilate reminded them, again, that Jesus was Christ. They chose this criminal over the Saviour of the world. Pilate still wanted to release Jesus; but these men, who were supposed to be pillars of the church, said crucify Him.

Matthew 27:23 "And the governor said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified." Matthew 27:24 "When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but [that] rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed [his] hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye [to it]." Matthew 27:25 "Then answered all the people, and said, His blood [be] on us, and on our children."

These religious people were still completely determined to kill Jesus. Pilate wanted no part of any of this and washed his hands of the whole matter. Pilate said publicly that Jesus was a just man, guilty of no crime. He said he would have nothing to do with this murder of an innocent man. These people (scribes, high priest, and multitude) spoke a terrible curse on their descendents, when they said, "His blood be on us, and on our children".

Matthew 27:26 "Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered [him] to be crucified."

Pilate released Barabbas and turned Jesus over to the soldiers to

Crucify Him.

Matthew 27:27 "Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band [of soldiers]." Matthew 27:28 "And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe."

Little did the soldiers know that even in the color of the robe, they had proclaimed Him as king.

Matthew 27:29 "And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put [it] upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!"

These people were not truly worshipping Jesus. They were ridiculing Him. It was as if they were saying, "So you say you think you are the King of the Jews."

Matthew 27:30 "And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head." Matthew 27:31 "And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify [him]."

It was bad enough to kill Him, but to humiliate Him is unthinkable.



## Matthew 58 Questions

1. At what time did the chief priests and scribes take council to kill Him?
2. Who did they deliver Him to?
3. What day and month was this?
4. What celebration day was this?
5. Why did Jesus have to be killed this specific day?
6. Who was Pilate?
7. What did Judas do with the 30 pieces of silver?
8. What did Judas say when he repented?
9. How did Judas kill himself?
10. Why could the chief priest not put this money in the treasure?
11. What did they decide to do with it?
12. What proved so well that these "men of God" were hypocrites to the core?
13. What did the governor ask Jesus?
14. What did Jesus answer?
15. Why did Pilate marvel at Him?
16. At the feast of the passover, it was a custom for the governor to do what?
17. What was the wicked prisoner's name?
18. Pilate knew that for \_\_\_\_\_ , they had delivered Him.
19. Who had a terrible dream the night before?
20. What two things should we take note of about the dream?
21. Who persuaded the multitude to choose Barabbas?
22. Who decided the punishment of Jesus?
23. Who said, "Let His blood be on us and our children".
24. Name five things the soldiers did to Jesus?

We will pick up this lesson in Matthew 27:32 "And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his cross.:

Cyrene was associated with Africa, so this means that Simon was a black man. This was not a voluntary act of Simon, but rather this job was thrust upon him. There was no evidence that he was forced. I believe when they told him to do this, that he willingly did it.

Matthew 27:33 "And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull," Matthew 27:34 "They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted [thereof], he would not drink."

Here, Matthew skipped all the details of getting to the hill of Golgotha where Jesus was to be crucified. This hill was chosen, because it was against Jewish law to kill someone inside the gate. This spot was on a busy road out of town, so the passerby could see the agony. And perhaps it would be a deterrent to future crime. You can actually see the form of a skull on the side of this mountain.

We assume that this vinegar and gall had some sort of use, maybe to kill some of the pain; but we see that Jesus refused it.

Matthew 27:35 "And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots."

This robe had no seam, so each one wanted it. There was no way to divide it, so they cast lots to see who would get it.

Crucifixion was a cruel form of punishment. the victims were nailed, hands and feet, and stood up in view of everybody to die. This process usually took several days with torturing pain to the victim.

Matthew 27:36 "And sitting down they watched him there;" Matthew 27:37 "And set up over his head his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS."

This was an accusation as far as they were concerned, but was 100% true. Jesus is not just King of the Jews, He is King of everyone.

Matthew 27:38 "Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left." Matthew 27:39 "And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads," Matthew 27:40 "And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest [it] in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross."

We will see that these two thieves, the one on the left and the one on the right, were very different. The difference lies not in the

sin they committed, but the fact that the one on the right repented and the one on the left did not. We read in Luke 23:43, That Jesus promised the one on the right that He would be with Him in Paradise.

Again, the temple that Jesus was speaking of was His body. These people were so blinded that they would not have believed, even if He suddenly were to get down from the cross.

Matthew 27:41 "Likewise also the chief priests mocking [him], with the scribes and elders, said," Matthew 27:42 "He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him." Matthew 27:43 "He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God." Matthew 27:44 "The thieves also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth."

What none of these people realized was that Jesus was completely in control of the situation, even though He was hanging on the cross. No one took His life from Him, He gave it willingly. Just as He did not have to prove anything to Satan, when Satan tempted Him for forty days and nights, He did not have to prove anything to these people either. They already had their chance to believe, and they rejected it. They (these so called religious people) will have their lot with the devil and his angels on judgement day. Jesus never will show us something physical so that we will believe. We must believe, when we cannot see, from our heart, not fact, but faith is required.

Matthew 27:45 "Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour."

Jesus hung on the cross for six hours, which are symbolic of the six days we must work. It, also, has to do with the six 1,000 year days that will be worked and then a 1,000 year day (millennium) of rest of the believers. God set the earth on six days work, and one day rest. Jesus was fulfilling every detail here. In six hours His work was completed. This darkness from twelve to three is three hours that were symbolic for the three days in the earth. The darkness symbolized that the Light (Jesus) had gone out for awhile.

Matthew 27:46 "And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?"

You see, at one point of this crucifixion, when Jesus took on the sin of the whole world, God turned His head. God cannot look upon sin that is not covered by the blood. He is pure. God will burn it up. The sacrifice was not completed yet.

Matthew 27:47 "Some of them that stood there, when they heard [that], said, This [man] calleth for Elias."

The strange thing was that they had no idea who Jesus really was. Just like most people of our day do not know. Jesus is Elias' God. How could they be so blind after all the miracles?

Matthew 27:48 "And straightway one of them ran, and took a

sponge, and filled [it] with vinegar, and put [it] on a reed, and gave him to drink." Matthew 27:49 "The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him." Matthew 27:50 "Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost."

Luke 23:46 "And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost."

Jesus dismissed His spirit from His body and told it to go to the Father. Even this was in His control and not someone else's. The teaching going around that Jesus was taken from the cross by two demons and suffered in hell for us is blasphemy. He went to hell to take the keys away from the devil, and to preach to those in hell, and bring them out with him (not to suffer). Jesus had everything under control all the time. The cross was no defeat, but the greatest victory mankind has ever known. Jesus is no longer on the cross. He is not the suffering Christ. He is the victorious Christ.

Matthew 27:51 "And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;" Matthew 27:52 "And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose," Matthew 27:53 "And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many."

Here is victory to the utmost. What all the prophets and holy men before Him had not been able to do, Jesus did. Jesus had opened the way to the Holy of Holies in heaven to His followers. God had torn down the curtain of partition that had kept the people from getting close to God. All believers have been made perfect by the blood of the Lamb (His precious Son).

These graves opened when Jesus came out of the earth and brought captivity captive with Him. The Sunday that Jesus arose is the feast of the firstfruits with the Jews. This is the first of the harvest. Truly these coming from the graves were the firstfruits of the rapture. These resurrected from the dead were seen of many in Jerusalem, as Jesus was seen by over 500.

Matthew 27:54 "Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God."

If anything would make you believe, this would. They had, probably, been involved in many crucifixions before and never saw signs like earthquakes and darkness in middle of the day before. It was time to believe.

Matthew 27:55 "And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him:"

There is no mention here, but John the beloved was present and Mary the mother of Jesus. Jesus left His mother with John.

Matthew 27:56 "Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the

mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children." Matthew 27:57 "When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple:" Matthew 27:58 "He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered." Matthew 27:59 "And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth," Matthew 27:60 "And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed."

Notice, here, this was late in the evening. Jesus' body being buried now would fulfill the feast of unleavened bread. Jesus is the Bread of life and He, like the Matzah, had stripes and holes. He was covering this feast, as well. Notice, there was NO embalming. That is Egyptian, not Hebrew custom. One more thing to notice is that this rich man was a disciple of Jesus Christ. Linen was what the high priest wore in the Holy of Holies to be in the presence of God.

Matthew 27:61 "And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre." Matthew 27:62 "Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate," Matthew 27:63 "Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again." Matthew 27:64 "Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first." Matthew 27:65 "Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make [it] as sure as ye can." Matthew 27:66 "So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch."

A good many of the women who followed Jesus seemed to be near when Jesus was crucified. Here we see Mary Magdalene, and another Mary near the tomb.

These scribes and Pharisees had seen enough that now they knew, perhaps, this was the Son of God and, perhaps, He would rise again. They figured out this scheme to secure the tomb. Jesus cannot be held by things of this earth. They could have had a thousand stones and it would have made no difference. You see, They knew nothing of the spirit at all, only the physical; so they had set the watch to keep the disciples from stealing His body. Had they known the Scriptures as well as they pretended, they would have known that He truly would rise on the third day, (Sunday, firstfruits).

Notes

## Matthew 59 Questions

1. What country was Simon from?
2. What did they compel him to do?
3. What color was Simon?
4. What are two other names for Calvary?
5. What did they try to give Jesus to drink?
6. Why was this hill chosen for the crucifixion?
7. What did they do with Jesus' garments?
8. What did they cast lots for?
9. What accusation did they put over Jesus' head?
10. How many were crucified with Jesus?
11. If thou be the Son of God, \_\_\_\_\_ .
12. What was different about these two thieves?
13. What temple was Jesus speaking of?
14. The scribes, chief priests, and pharisees said that they would believe if He did what?
15. What did they accuse Jesus of calling Himself?
16. These religious people turned down Jesus, so they will have their lot with whom?
17. There was darkness, for how long?
18. Why was Jesus on the cross six hours?
19. What does Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani mean?
20. Who did the people think Jesus was calling?
21. When Jesus went to hell, He was \_\_\_\_\_ .
22. What two things did He do there?
23. The temple veil was rent how?
24. What had Jesus done that all the holy men of old could not?
25. Those who came out of the graves with Jesus were \_\_\_\_\_ of the rapture.
26. What made the centurion say "Truly this was the Son of God"?
27. Where had the women followed Jesus from?
28. Who was the rich man who came for Jesus' body?
29. What did they wrap the body of Jesus in?
30. Was Jesus embalmed? Why?
31. This rich man was a \_\_\_\_\_ .
32. Who was sitting by the sepulchre?
33. What did the scribes and Pharisees ask Pilate to do? Why?
34. What day would Jesus rise? What other names is it called?

We will begin this lesson in Matthew 28:1 "In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first [day] of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre."

The women were the last of Jesus' followers at the cross, and as we see here, the first at the grave. It appears that these two Marys came to the tomb early Sunday morning. The Jews would call this day firstfruits; the Christians would come to know it as Easter. At any rate, this is Resurrection Day. These two women, probably, were not aware that the sepulchre had been sealed. Their love and devotion to Jesus had brought them.

Matthew 28:2 "And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it."

This is an interesting statement. Jesus would not need the stone removed for Him to come out, but Mary and Mary Magdalene would need it moved for them to go in. The soldier guards needed a sign, as well.

This "earthquake" would certainly awaken them. Earthquakes, throughout the Bible are God dealing with man.

This "angel" sitting on the rock had to be quite a sight to see in itself.

Matthew 28:3 "His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow:" Matthew 28:4 "And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead [men]."

This angel had to be of great authority. He was, probably, the personal angel of Jesus, since he had such a bright countenance. Jesus is the Light. Those in close contact with Him would have this brightness, as Moses' head had shone when he came down the mountain.

People, who have seen angels in visions, say that they are enormous. This one moved this huge stone by himself, so he must have been very large.

This white garment meant holiness and righteousness. The saints in Revelation are robed in white, Because they have been washed in the blood of the Lamb. This frightened the keepers so much they shook and fainted.

Matthew 28:5 "And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified."

The Scripture did not say that the women were afraid. The angel comforted them just the same.

Matthew 28:6 "He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay." Matthew 28:7 "And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he

goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you."

These women found out first about Jesus, because they were there. they cared for the Lord whether living or dead. The eleven disciples were not told first, because they had gone back to their old way of life. Some, as we will find out later, had stopped fishing for men and had gone back to fishing for fish. I guess you could really say that these two Marys were ministers obeying the commission to go and tell. Notice also, that they were not just to tell the women they found, but to go and seek out the disciples and tell them. The message they were to tell is still the same today, HE IS RISEN. He had promised to go to Galilee, and that was where they would find Him.

Matthew 28:8 "And they departed quickly from the sepulchre with fear and great joy; and did run to bring his disciples word."

Male or female, young or old, white or black, the only answer God wants to hear, when He says go and tell, is "Here am I Lord, send me". This was what these women did. Fear of God is the beginning of wisdom. These women feared God and all the time were filled with great joy. They did not just go at their own convenience and dally around, they ran. Be on fire for God. Do what He wants you to do, and do it NOW.

Matthew 28:9 "And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him."

There was no question now. This was their Lord. They humbled themselves and bowed down to Him in reverence. These women had pure hearts, and that allows us to see God. In this instance, He is the Risen Christ, God the Son, Messiah, Lord of Lords. Seek and ye shall find. They had found their master. Their sorrow had been turned into joy.

Matthew 28:10 "Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me."

Jesus called them "brethren" to reassure them that, in spite of their fear and abandonment of Him at the cross, He still loved them. He sent them word, so that they would know what He prophesied had happened. He was alive. He said, Meet me in Galilee, and I will show you. Some of the other books of the Bible have additional information on this, but we will wait until we get to that book to discuss it. The scene changed in the next verse to the watchmen who had apparently finally awakened.

Matthew 28:11 "Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done. " Matthew 28:12 "And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers," Matthew 28:13 "Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him [away] while we slept." Matthew 28:14 "And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you." Matthew 28:15 "So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day."



These religious people knew if they got back to the governor, that they would be in serious danger. He had not wanted to kill Jesus from the beginning. How in the world they got these people to lie, I do not know. I guess money was more important to them than their souls. These high priests, scribes, and pharisees should have been on their knees repenting, because they knew that they had been wrong. They wanted earthly power enough to trade their souls for it. Jews sent people everywhere scattering this lie, and it is still believed by most of them, even today.

Matthew 28:16 "Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them." Matthew 28:17 "And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted."

The women's message from Jesus to them had been heeded. They met Jesus on a mountain in Galilee of Jesus' choosing. They worshipped Him. The "some" that doubted was, probably, Thomas, who is told of in another book. There were, probably, more than just the eleven here, but they were mentioned specifically because of their following instructions to meet Him.

Matthew 28:18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth." Matthew 28:19 "Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:" Matthew 28:20 "Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, [even] unto the end of the world. Amen."

Jesus explained, here, that all power was given unto Him. The next statement is the Great Commission given to all who believe in Jesus and especially those called to minister. Jesus not only told us to teach, but what to teach and what to do when someone gets saved. The baptism of salvation is in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. The baptism of the Holy Spirit in the name of Jesus alone. He not only said to teach what He taught, but He promised to be with us as we teach. He specifically said to teach the things He commanded us. He didn't say to twist it around to fit our views. Just give them the pure Word of the Lord Jesus Christ. It is powerful unto salvation.

Thank you for your time and patience. I hope you have enjoyed this half as much as I enjoyed writing it,

Your friend in Christ

Louise Haney

## Matthew 60 Questions

1. When did Mary and Mary Magdalene come back to the tomb?
2. Who were the last at the cross and the first at the tomb?
3. What did the Jews call the day we call Easter?
4. What has brought them to the tomb?
5. What natural phenomenon happened?
6. Who rolled back the stone?
7. Who did he roll the stone back for?
8. Describe the angel?
9. What happened to the guards when they saw the angel?
10. What did the angel say to the women?
11. Where was Jesus?
12. Where were the women to tell the disciples to meet Jesus?
13. Where were the disciples?
14. What message were these women to tell? (three words)
15. How did they go?
16. What is the only answer God wants, when He calls us to minister?
17. What is the beginning of wisdom?
18. What did the women do when they saw Jesus?
19. Their sorrow was turned into \_\_\_\_\_.
20. What did Jesus call the disciples?
21. What did this indicate about His feelings toward them?
22. Who did the watch soldiers go to, to report?
23. What did they tell them to do?
24. How did they get them to do it?
25. Why did they not want the governor to know?
26. How long did this lie continue to be told?
27. Where did Jesus meet the disciples in Galilee?
28. What did they do when they saw Him?
29. Were there any exceptions?
30. What did Jesus say to them?
31. What is this called?
32. How were they to baptize, in whose name?
33. The Word of the Lord is powerful unto\_\_\_\_\_.